This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

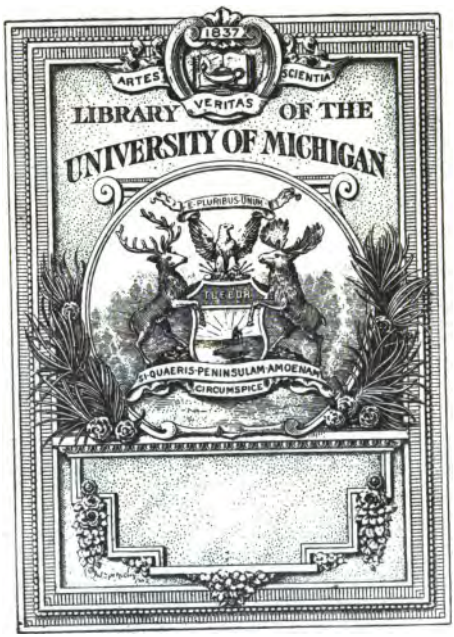
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

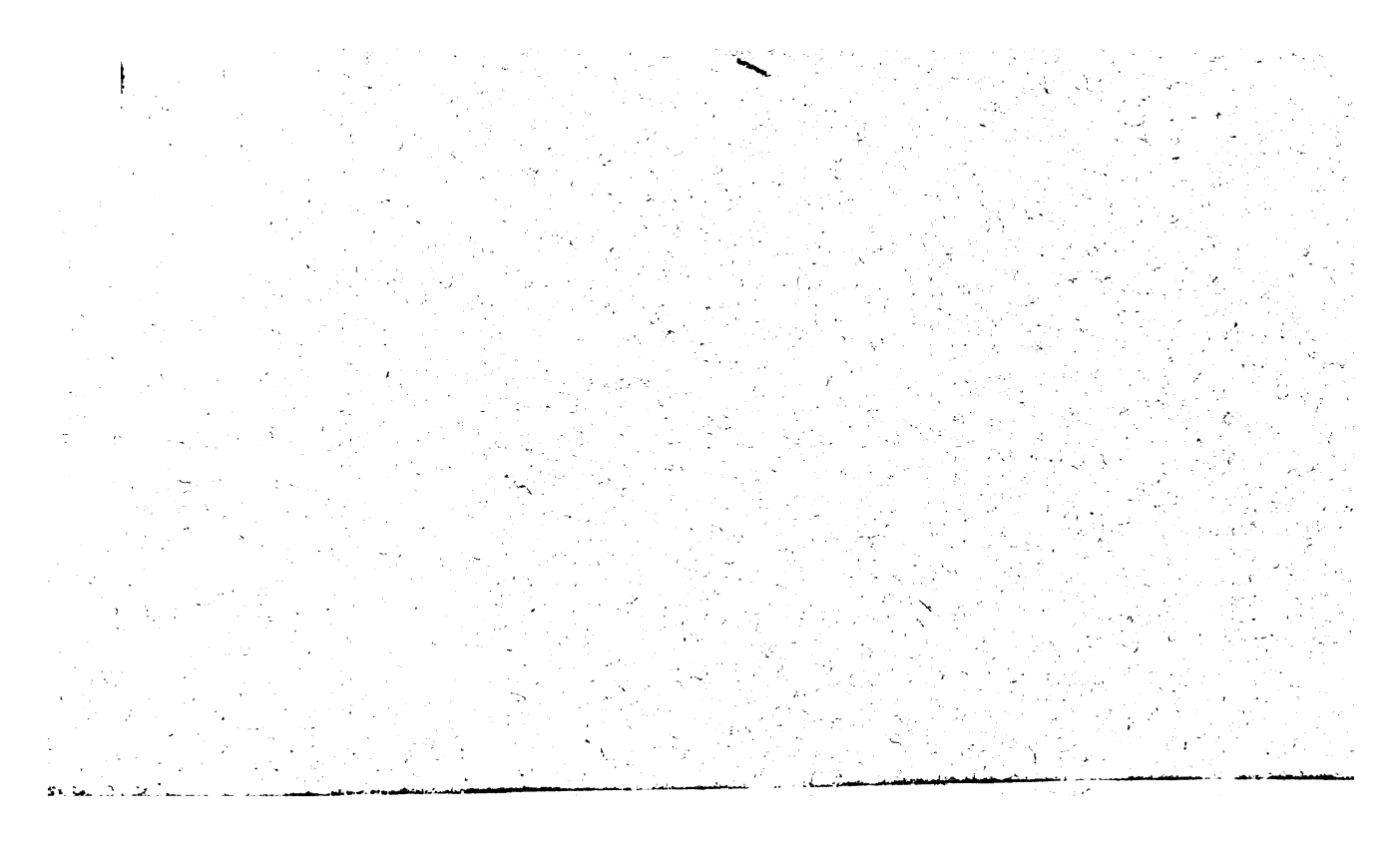
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`


1837
ARTES
SCIENTIA
VERITAS
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
E PLURIBUS UNUM
SI QUAERIS PENINSULAM AMOENAM
CIRCUMSPICE

828
P183p.
1784



24624

THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF PETER WILKINS,

A CORNISH MAN.

RELATING PARTICULARLY,

His Shipwreck near the South Pole; his wonderful Paſſage through a Subterraneous Cavern into a kind of new world; his there meeting with a Gawry, or Flying Woman, whoſe life he preſerved, and afterwards married her; his extraordinary conveyance to the Country of Glums and Gawrys, or Men and Women that Fly. Likewiſe a deſcription of this ſtrange Country, with the Laws, Cuſtoms, and Manners of its inhabitants, and the Author's remarkable Tranſactions among them.

TAKEN from his own mouth, in his Paſſage to *England*, from off *Cape Horn*, in *America*, in the Ship *Hector*.

WITH an INTRODUCTION, giving an Account of the ſurpriſing Manner of his coming on board that Veſſel, and his death on his landing at *Plymouth*, in the Year 1739.

Robert Pallock,

BY *R. S.* A PASSENGER IN THE HECTOR.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

BERWICK:
PRINTED FOR W. PHORSON, AND B. LAW,
AVE-MARIA-LANE. LONDON.
M.DCC.LXXXIV.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

ELIZABETH,

COUNTESS OF

NORTHUMBERLAND.

MADAM,

FEW Authors, I believe, who write in my way, whatever view they may ſet out with, can, in the proſecution of their work, forbear to dreſs their fictitious characters in the real ornaments themſelves have been moſt delighted with.

THIS, I confeſs, hath been my caſe, in the perſon of *Youwarkee*, in the following ſheets; for having formed her body, I found myſelf at an inexpreſſible loſs how, to adorn her mind in the maſterly ſentiments I coveted to endue her with, 'till

I recollected the moſt amiable pattern in your Ladyſhip; a ſingle view of which, at a time of the utmoſt fatigue to his Lordſhip, hath charmed my imagination ever ſince.

If a participater of the cares of life in general alleviates the concerns of man, what an invaluable bleſſing muſt that Lady prove, to the ſoftneſs of whoſe ſex nature hath conjoined an aptitude for council, an application, zeal and diſpatch, but too rarely found in his own?

Had my ſituation in life been ſo happy as to have preſented me with opportunities of more frequent and minuter remarks upon your Ladyſhip's conduct, I might have defy'd the whole Britiſh fair to have outſhone my ſouthern Gawry: For if, to a majeſtic form and extenſive capacity, I had been qualified to have copied that natural ſweetneſs of diſpoſition, that maternal tenderneſs, that chear-

fulneſs, that complacency, condeſcenſion, affability, and unaffected benevolence, which ſo apparently diſtinguiſh the Counteſs of Northumberland, I had exhibited in my *Youwarkee*—a ſtandard for future generations.

MADAM, I am the more ſenſible of my ſpeaking but the truth, from the late inſtance of your benignity, which intitles me to the honour of ſubſcribing myſelf,

MADAM,

Your Ladyſhip's

moſt obliged, and

moſt obedient Servant.

R. P.

THE INTRODUCTION.

IT might be looked upon as impertinent in me, who am about to give the life of another, to trouble the reader with any of my own concerns, or the affairs that led me into the South Seas. Therefore, I ſhall only acquaint him, that in my return on board the Hector, as a paſſenger, round Cape Horn, for England, full late in the ſeaſon, the wind and currents ſetting ſtrong againſt us, our ſhip drove more ſoutherly by ſeveral degrees than the uſual courſe, even to the latitude of 75 or 76; when, the wind chopping about, we began to reſume our intended way. It was about the middle of June, when the days are there at the ſhorteſt, on a very ſtarry and moon-light night, that we obſerved, at ſome diſtance, a very black cloud, but ſeemingly

of no extraordinary ſize or height, moving very faſt towards us, and ſeeming to follow the ſhip, which then made great way. Every one on deck was very curious in obſerving its motions; and perceiving it frequently to divide, and preſently to cloſe again, and not to continue long in any determined ſhape, our Captain, who had never before been ſo far to the ſouthward as he then found himſelf, had many conjectures what this phenomenon might portend; and every one offering his own opinion, it ſeemed at laſt to be generally agreed, that there might poſſibly be a ſtorm gathering in the air, of which this was the prognoſtic; and by its following, and nearly keeping pace with us, we were in great fear leſt it ſhould break upon and overwhelm us, if not carefully avoided. Our commander therefore, as it approached nearer and nearer, ordered one of the ſhip's guns to be fired, to try if the percuſſion of the air would diſperſe it. This was no ſooner done, than we heard a prodigious flounce in the water, at but a ſmall diſtance from the ſhip, on the weather quarter; and after a violent noiſe, or cry in the air, the cloud, that upon our firing diſſipated, ſeemed to return again, but by degrees diſappeared. Whilſt we were all very much ſurprized at this unexpected accident, I, being naturally very curious, and inquiſitive into the cau-

ſes of all unuſual incidents, begged the Captain to ſend the boat, to ſee, if poſſible, what it was that had fallen from the cloud, and offered myſelf to make one in her. He was much againſt this at firſt, as it would retard his voyage, now we were going ſo ſmoothly before the wind. But in the midſt of our debate, we plainly heard a voice calling out for help, in our own tongue, like a perſon in great diſtreſs. I then inſiſted on going, and not ſuffering a fellow creature to periſh for the ſake of a trifling delay. In compliance with my reſolute demand, he ſlackened ſail; and hoiſting out the boat, myſelf and ſeven others made to the cry; and ſoon found it to come from an elderly man, labouring for life, with his arms acroſs ſeveral long poles, of equal ſize at both ends, very light, and tied to each other in a very odd manner. The ſailors at firſt were very fearful of aſſiſting, or coming near him; crying to each other, he muſt be a monſter, and perhaps might overſet the boat and deſtroy them; but hearing him ſpeak Engliſh, I was very angry with them for their fooliſh apprehenſions, and cauſed them to clap their oars under him; and at length we got him into the boat. He had an extravagant beard, and alſo long blackiſh hair upon his head. As ſoon as he could ſpeak (for he was almoſt ſpent) he very familiarly took me by

the hand, I having ſet myſelf cloſe by him to obſerve him, and ſqueezing it, thanked me very kindly for my civility to him, and likewiſe thanked all the ſailors. I then aſked him by what poſſible accident he came there; but he ſhook his head, declining to ſatisfy my curioſity. Hereupon reflecting, that it might juſt then be troubleſome for him to ſpeak, and that we ſhould have leiſure enough in our voyage for him to relate, and me to hear his ſtory, (which, from the ſurpriſing manner of his falling amongſt us, I could not but believe would contain ſomething very remarkable) I waved any further ſpeech with him at that time.

We had him to the ſhip, and taking off his wet clothes, put him to bed in my cabbin; and I having a large proviſion of ſtores on board, and no concern in the ſhip, grew very fond of him, and ſupplied him with every thing he wanted. In our frequent diſcourſes together, he had ſeveral times dropped looſe hints of his paſt tranſactions, which but the more inflamed me with impatience to hear the whole of them. About this time, having juſt begun to double the Cape, our Captain thought of watering at the firſt convenient place; and finding the ſtranger had no money to pay his paſſage, and that he had been from England no leſs than thirty-five years, deſpairing of his

reward for conducting him thither, he intimated to him, that he muſt expect to be put on ſhore, to ſhift for himſelf, when we put in for water. This entirely ſunk the ſtranger's ſpirits, and gave me great concern; inſomuch, that I fully reſolved, if the Captain ſhould really prove ſuch a brute, to take the payment of his paſſage on myſelf.

As we came nearer to the deſtined watering, the Captain ſpoke the plainer of his intentions, (for I had not yet hinted my deſign to him, or any one elſe) and one morning the ſtranger came into my cabbin, with tears in his eyes, telling me, he verily believed the Captain would be as good as his word, and ſet him on ſhore, which he very much dreaded. I did not chuſe to tell him immediately what I deſigned in his favour, but aſked him if he could think of no way of ſatisfying the Captain, or any one elſe who might thereupon be induced to engage for him; and further, how he expected to live when he ſhould get to England, a man quite forgotten and penny-leſs? Hereupon he told me, he had ever ſince his being on board, conſidering his deſtitute condition, entertained a thought of having his adventures written; which, as there was ſomething ſo uncommon in them, he was ſure the world would be glad to know; and he had flattered

himſelf with hopes of raiſing ſomewhat by the ſale of them to put him in a way of living: But, as it was plain now he ſhould never ſee England without my aſſiſtance; if I would anſwer for his paſſage, and write his life, he would communicate to me a faithful narrative thereof, which he believed would pay me to the full, any charge I might be at on his account. I was very well pleaſed with this overture; not from the proſpect of gain by the copy, but from the expectation I had of being fully ſatisfied in what I had ſo long deſired to know. So I told him I would make him eaſy in that reſpect. This quite tranſported him. He careſſed me, and called me his deliverer; and was then going open-mouthed to the Captain to tell him ſo; but I put a ſtop to that; for, ſays I, (though I inſiſt upon hearing your ſtory) the Captain may yet relent of his purpoſe, and not leave you on ſhore; and if that ſhould prove the caſe, I ſhall neither part with my money for you, nor you with your intereſt in your adventures to me: Whereupon he agreed I was right, and deſiſted.

When we had taken in beſt part of our water, and the boat was going its laſt turn, the Captain ordered up the ſtrange man, as they called him, and told him he muſt go on board the boat, which was to leave him on ſhore,

with ſome few proviſions. I happening to hear nothing of theſe orders, they were ſo ſudden, the poor man was afraid, after all, he ſhould have been hurried to land without my knowledge; but begging very hard of the Captain only for leave to ſpeak with me before he went, I was called, (though with ſome reluctance; for the Captain diſliked me, for the liberties I frequently took with him, on account of his brutal behaviour.) I expoſtulated with the cruel wretch on the inhumanity of the action he was about; telling him, if he had reſolved the poor man ſhould periſh, it would have been better to have ſuffered him to do ſo when he was at the laſt extremity, than to expoſe him afreſh, by this means, to a death as certain, in a more lingering and miſerable way. But the ſavage being reſolved, and nothing moved by what I ſaid, I paid him part of the paſſage down, and agreed to pay the reſt at our arrival in England.

THUS having reprieved the poor man, the next thing was to enter upon my new employ of Amanuenſis. And having a long ſpace of time before us, we allotted two hours every morning for the purpoſe of writing down his life from his own mouth; and frequently, when wind and weather kept us below, we ſpent ſome time of an afternoon in the ſame exerciſe, till we had quite compleated it.

HAVING finiſhed the work to our mutual ſatisfaction, I locked it up, in order to peruſe it at leiſure, intending to have preſented it to him at our arrival in England, to diſpoſe of as he pleaſed, in ſuch a way as might have conduced moſt to his profit; for I reſolved, notwithſtanding our agreement, and the obligations he was under to me, that the whole of that ſhould be his own. But he, having been in a declining ſtate ſometime before we reached ſhore, died the very night we landed; and his funeral falling upon me, I thought I had the greateſt right to the manuſcript: Which, however, I had no deſign to have parted with; but ſhewing it to ſome judicious friends, I have by them been prevailed with, not to conceal from the world what may prove ſo very entertaining, and perhaps uſeful.

R. P.

THE CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

GIVING an account of the author's birth and family; the fondneſs of his mother; his being put to an academy at ſixteen by the advice of his friend; his thought of his own illiterature. *Page* 15.

CHAP. II.

How he ſpent his time at the academy; an intrigue with a ſervant-maid there; ſhe declares herſelf with child by him; her expoſtulations with him; he is put to it for money; refuſed it from home by his friend, who had married his mother; is drawn in to marry the maid; ſhe lies in at her aunt's; returns to her ſervice; he has another child by her. 20

CHAP. III.

Minds his ſtudies; informs his maſter of his mother's marriage, and uſage of him; hears of her death; makes his maſter his guardian; goes with him to take poſſeſſion of his eſtate; is informed all is given to his father-in-law; moral reflections on his condition, and on his father's crimes. 25

CHAP. IV.

Departs ſecretly from his maſter; travels to Briſtol; religious thoughts by the way; enters on ſhipboard, and is made captain's ſteward. 33

CONTENTS.

CHAP. V.

His entertainment on board; ſets ſail; his ſickneſs; engagement with a French privateer; is taken and laid in irons. Twenty one priſoners turned adrift in a ſmall boat with only two days proviſion. 38

CHAP. VI.

The boat two hundred leagues from land, makes no way, but drives more to ſea by the wind; the people nine days at quarter allowance; four die with hunger the twelfth day; five more the fourteenth day; on the fifteenth they eat one juſt dead; want water exceſſive; they ſpy a ſail; are taken up; work their paſſage to the African ſhore; are ſent on a ſecret expedition; are way-laid, taken, made ſlaves, and ſent up the country. 44

CHAP. VII.

The author eſcapes with Glanlepze, a native; his hardſhips in travel; plunder of a cottage; his fears; adventure with a crocodile; paſſage of a river; adventure with a lioneſs and whelp; arrives at Glanlepze's houſe; the trial of Glanlepze's wife's conſtancy; the tender meeting of her and her huſband; the author's reflections thereupon. 50

CHAP. VIII.

How the author paſſed his time with Glanlepze; his acquaintance with ſome Engliſh priſoners; they pro-

ject an escape; he joins them; they seize a Portugueze ship, and get off; make a long run from land; want water; they anchor at a desart island; the boat goes on shore for water; they lose their anchor in a storm; the author and one Adams drove to sea; a miraculous passage to a rock; Adams drowned there; the author's miserable condition. 63

CHAP. IX.

He thinks of destroying himself; his soliloquy; strange accident in the hold; his surprise; cannot climb the rock; his method to sweeten his water; lives many months on board; ventures to sea in his boat several times, and takes many fish; almost overcome by an eel. 71

CHAP. X.

Lays in great store of provision; resolves to traverse the rock; sails for three weeks, still seeing it only; is sucked under the rock, and buried down a cataract; continues there five weeks; his description of the cavern; his thoughts, and difficulties; his arrival at a great lake, and his landing in the beautiful country of Graundevolet. 82

CHAP. XI.

His joy on his arrival at land; a description of the place; no inhabitants; wants fresh water; resides in a Grotto; finds water; views the country; carries his things to the Grotto. 87

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XII.

An account of the Grotto; a room added to it; a view of that building; the author makes a little cart; alſo a wet dock for his boat; goes in queſt of proviſion; a deſcription of divers fruits and plants; he brings home a cart-load of different ſorts; makes experiments on them; loads his cart with others; a great diſappointment; makes good bread; never ſees the ſun; the nature of the light. 93

CHAP. XIII.

The author lays in a ſtore againſt the dark weather; hears voices; his thoughts thereon; perſuades himſelf it was a dream; hears them again; determines to ſee if any one lodges in the rock; is ſatisfied there is nobody; obſervations on what he ſaw; finds a ſtrong weed like whipcord; makes a drag net; lengthens it; catches a monſter; its deſcription; makes oil of it. 105

CHAP. XIV.

The author paſſes the ſummer pleaſantly; hears the voices in the winter; ventures out; ſees a ſtrange ſight on the lake; his uneaſineſs at it; his dream; ſoliloquy; hears the voices again, and perceives a great ſhock on his building; takes up a beautiful woman; he thinks her dead, but recovers her; a deſcription of her; ſhe ſtays with him. 117

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XV.

He is afraid of losing his new mistress; they live together all winter; a remark on that; they begin to know each others language; a long discourse between them at cross purposes; she flies; they engage to be man and wife. 127

CHAP. XVI.

The author's disappointment at first going to bed with his new wife; some strange circumstances relating thereto; she resolves several questions he asks her, and clears up his fears as to the voices; a description of Swangeans. 136

CHAP. XVII.

Youwarkee cannot bear a strong light; her husband makes her spectacles, which help her; a description of them. 142

CHAP. XVIII.

Youwarkee with child; the author's stock of provisions; no beast or fish in Youwarkee's country; the voices again; her reasons for not seeing those who uttered them; she bears a son; a hard speech in her lying-in; divers birds appear; their eggs gathered; how the author kept account of time. 147

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XIX.

His concern about clothing for Pedro, his eldeſt ſon; his diſcourſe with his wife about the ſhip; her flight to it; his melancholy reflections till her return; an account of what ſhe had done, and of what ſhe brought; ſhe clothes her children, and takes a ſecond flight. 153

CHAP. XX.

The author obſerves her flight; a deſcription of a Glumm in the Graundee; ſhe finds out the gulph, not far from the ſhip; brings home more goods; makes her a gown by her huſband's inſtruction. 161

CHAP. XXI.

The author gets a breed of poultry; by what means; builds them an houſe; how he managed to keep them in winter. 167

CHAP. XXII.

Reflections on mankind; the author wants to be with his ſhip; projects going, but perceives it impracticable; Youwarkee offers her ſervice, and goes; an account of her tranſactions on board; remarks on her ſagacity; ſhe diſpatches ſeveral cheſts of goods through the gulph to the lake; an account of a danger ſhe eſcaped; the author has a fit of ſickneſs. 172

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XXIII.

The religion of the author's family. 181

CHAP. XXIV.

An account of his children; their names; they are exerciſed in flying; his boat crazy; Youwarkee intends a viſit to her father, but firſt takes another flight to the ſhip; ſends a boat and cheſts through the gulph; clothes her children; is with child again, ſo her viſit is put off; an inventory of the laſt freight of goods; the author's method of treating his children; Youwarkee, her ſon Tommy, with her daughters Patty and Hallicarnie, ſet out for her father's. 187

CHAP. XXV.

Youwarkee's account of the ſtages to Arndrumſtake; the author uneaſy at her flight; his employment in her abſence, and preparations for receiving her father; how he ſpent the evenings with the children. 197

CHAP. XXVI.

His concern at Youwarkee's ſtay; reflections on his condition; hears a voice call him; Youwarkee's brother Quangrollart viſits him with a companion; he treats them at the Grotto; the brother diſcovers himſelf by accident; the author preſents his children to him. 203

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XXVII.

Quangrollart's account of Youwarkee's journey, and reception at her father's. 211

CHAP. XXVIII.

A diſcourſe on light; Quangrollart explains the word Craſhee; believes a fowl is a fruit; gives a further account of Youwarkee's reception by her father, and by the king; Tommy and Hallycarnie provided for at court; Youwarkee and her father viſit the Colambs, and are viſited; her return put off till next winter, when her father is to come with her. 218

CHAP. XXIX.

The author ſhews Quangrollart and Roſig his poultry; they are ſurpriſed at them; he takes them a fiſhing; they wonder at his cart, and at his ſhooting a fowl; they are terribly frightened at the firing of the gun; he pacifies them. 226

A

GENUINE ACCOUNT

OF THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

PETER WILKINS.

CHAP. I.

Giving an account of the Author's birth and family; the fondneſs of his mother; his being put to an academy at ſixteen by the advice of his friend; his thoughts of his own illiterature.

I WAS born at Penhale, in the county of Cornwall, on the 21ſt day of December, 1685, about four months after my father Peter Wilkins, who was a zealous proteſtant of the church of England, had been executed by Jeffreys, in Somerſetſhire, for joining in the deſign of raiſing the duke of Monmouth to the Britiſh throne. I was named, after my father and grand-

father, Peter, and was my Father's only child, by Alice his wife, the daughter of John Capert, a clergyman in a neighbouring village. My grandfather was a ſhop-keeper at Newport, who, by great frugality, and extraordinary application, had raiſed a fortune of about one hundred and ſixty pounds a-year in lands, and a conſiderable ſum of ready money; all which at his death devolved upon my father, as his only child, who being no leſs parſimonious than my grandfather, and living upon his own eſtate, had much improved it in value, before his marriage with my mother; but, he coming to that unhappy end, my mother, after my birth, placed all her affection upon me, (her growing hopes, as ſhe called me) and uſed every method, in my minority, of encreaſing the ſtore for my benefit.

IN this manner ſhe went on, till I grew too big, as I thought, for confinement at the apron ſtring, being then about fourteen years of age; and having met with ſo much indulgence from her, for that reaſon found very little or no contradiction from any body elſe; ſo I looked on myſelf as a perſon of ſome conſequence, and began to take all opportunities of enjoying the company of my neighbours, who hinted frequently, that the reſtraint I was under was too great a curb upon an inclination like mine of ſeeing the world; but my mother, ſtill impatient of any little abſence, by exceſſive fondneſs, and encouraging of every inclination I ſeemed to have, when ſhe could be a partaker with me, kept me within bounds of reſtraint, till I arrived at my ſixteenth year.

ABOUT this time I got acquainted with a country gentleman, of a ſmall paternal eſtate, which had been never the better for being in his hands, and had ſome uneaſy demands upon it. He ſoon grew very fond of

me, hoping, as I had reaſon afterwards to believe, by a union with my mother, to ſet himſelf free from his entanglements. She was then about thirty-five years old, and ſtill continued my father's widow, out of particular regard to me, as I have all the reaſon in the world to believe. She was really a beautiful woman, and of a ſanguine complexion; but had always carried herſelf with ſo much reſerve, and given ſo little encouragement to any of the other ſex, that ſhe had paſſed her widowhood with very few ſolicitations to alter her way of life. This gentleman, obſerving my mother's conduct, in order to ingratiate himſelf with her, had ſhewn numberleſs inſtances of regard for me, and, as he told my mother, had obſerved many things in my diſcourſe, actions, and turn of mind, that preſaged wonderful expectations from me, if my genius was but properly cultivated.

This diſcourſe, from a man of very good parts, and eſteemed by every body an accompliſhed gentleman, by degrees wrought upon my mother, and more and more inflamed her with a deſire of adding what luſtre ſhe could to my applauded abilities, and influenced her ſo far as to aſk him in what manner moſt properly to proceed with me. My gentleman then had his deſire; for, he feared not the widow, could he but properly diſpoſe of her charge: So, having deſired a little time to conſider of a matter of ſuch importance, he ſoon after told her, he thought the moſt uſeful method of eſtabliſhing me would be at an academy, kept by a very worthy and judicious gentleman, about thirty or more miles from us, in Somerſetſhire; where, if I could but be admitted, the maſter taking in but a ſtated number of ſtudents at a time, he did not in the leaſt doubt, but I ſhould fully anſwer the character he had given her of me, and outſhine moſt of my cotemporaries.

My mother, over anxious for my good, ſeeming to liſten to this propoſal, my friend, as I call him, propoſed taking a journey himſelf to the academy, to ſee if any place was vacant for my reception, and learn the terms of my admiſſion; and in three days time returned with an engaging account of the place, the maſter, the regularity of the ſcholars, of an apartment ſecured for my reception, and, in ſhort, whatever elſe might captivate my mother's opinion in favour of his ſcheme; and indeed, though he acted principally from another motive, as was plain afterwards, I cannot help thinking he believed it to be the beſt way of diſpoſing of a lad, ſixteen years old, born to a pretty fortune, and who, at that age, could but juſt read a chapter in the teſtament: For he had before beat my mother quite out of her inclination to a grammar ſchool in the neighbourhood, from a contempt, he ſaid, it would bring upon me from lads much my juniors in years, by being placed in the firſt rudiments of learning with them.

Well, the whole concern of my mother's little family was now employed in fitting me out for my expedition; and as my friend had been ſo inſtrumental in bringing it about, he never miſſed a day enquiring how preparations went on, and, during the proceſs, by humouring me, ingratiated himſelf more and more with my mother; but without ſeeming in the leaſt to aim at it.

In ſhort, the hour of my departure arrived; and though I had never been maſter of above ſixpence at one time, unleſs at a fair, or ſo, for immediate ſpending, my mother, thinking to make my heart eaſy at our ſeparation, which had it appeared otherwiſe, would have broke hers, and ſpoiled all, gave me a

double piſtole in gold, and a little ſilver in my pocket to prevent my changing it.

THUS I, the coach waiting for us at the door, having been preached into a good liking of the ſcheme by my friend, who now inſiſted upon making one of our company to introduce us, mounted the carriage with more alacrity than could be expected for one who had never before been beyond the ſmoke of his mother's chimney; but the thoughts I had conceived, from my friend's diſcourſe, of liberty in the academic way, and the weight of ſo much money in my pocket, as I then imagined would ſcarce ever be exhauſted, were prevailing cordials to keep my ſpirits on the wing. We lay at an inn that night near the maſter's houſe, and the next day I was initiated; and at parting with me, my friend preſented me with a guinea. When I found myſelf thus rich, I muſt ſay I heartily wiſhed they were all fairly at home again, that I might have time to count my caſh, and diſpoſe of ſuch part of it as I had already appropriated to ſeveral uſes then in embryo.

THE next morning left me maſter of my wiſhes: For my mother came and took her laſt (though ſhe little thought of it) leave of me, and ſmothering me with her careſſes and prayers for my well-doing, in the heighth of her ardour, put into my hand another guinea, promiſing to ſee me again quickly; and deſiring me, in the mean time, to be a very good huſband, which I have ſince taken to be a ſort of prophetic ſpeech, ſhe bid me farewel.

I SHALL not trouble you with the reception I met with from my maſter or his ſcholars; or tell you how ſoon I made friends of all my companions, by ſome trifling largeſſes, which my ſtock enabled me to beſtow,

as occaſion required; but I muſt inform you, that after ſixteen years of idleneſs at home, I had but little heart to my nouns and pronouns, which now began to be crammed upon me; and being the eldeſt lad in the houſe, I ſometimes regretted the loſs of the time paſt; and at other times deſpaired of ever making a ſcholar at my years; and was aſhamed to ſtand like a great lubber, declining of *hæc mulier*, a woman, whilſt my ſchool-fellows, and juniors by five years, were engaged in the love ſtories of Ovid, or the luſcious ſongs of Horace: I own theſe thoughts almoſt overcame me, and threw me into a deep melancholly, of which I ſoon after by letter informed my mother; who (by the advice as I ſuppoſe of my friend, by this time her ſuitor) ſent me word to mind my ſtudies, and I ſhould want for nothing.

CHAP. II.

How he ſpent his time at the academy; an intrigue with a ſervant maid there, ſhe declares herſelf with child by him; her expoſtulations to him; he is put to it for money; refuſed it from home, by his friend, who had married his mother; is drawn in to marry the maid; ſhe lies-in at her aunt's; returns to her ſervice; he has another child by her.

I HAD now been paſſing my time for about three months in this melancholy way, and you may imagine, under that diſadvantage, had made but little progreſs in my learning; when one of our maids, taking notice one day of my uneaſineſs, as I ſat muſing in my chamber, according to my cuſtom, began to rally me, that

I was certainly in love, I was ſo ſad. Indeed, I never had a thought of love before; but the good-natured girl ſeeming to pity me, and ſeriouſly aſking me the cauſe, I fairly opened my heart to her; and for fear my maſter ſhould know it, gave her half a crown to be ſilent. This laſt engagement fixed her my devotee, and from that time we had frequent conferences in confidence together; till at length inclination, framed by opportunity, produced the date of a world of concern to me; for, about ſix months after my arrival at the academy, inſtead of proving my parts by my ſcholarſhip, I had proved my manhood, by being the deſtined father of an infant, which my female correſpondent then aſſured me would ſoon be my own.

We nevertheleſs held on our frequent intercourſe; nor was I ſo alarmed at the news as I ought to have been, till about two months after, when Patty (for that was the only name I then knew her by) explained herſelf to me in the following terms:——You know, Mr Peter, how matters are with me: I ſhould be very ſorry for your ſake, and for my own too, to reveal my ſhame; but in ſpite of us both, nature will ſhew itſelf; and truly, I think, ſome care ſhould be taken, and ſome method propoſed, to preſerve the infant, and avoid, as far as may be, the inconveniencies that may attend us; for here is now no room for delay.——This ſpeech, I own, gave me the firſt reflection I ever had in my life, and lock'd up all my faculties for a long time; nor was I able, for the variety of ideas that crowded my brain, to make a word of anſwer, but ſtood like an image of ſtone; till Patty, ſeeing my confuſion, deſired me to recollect my reaſon, for as it was too late to undo what had been done, it remained now only to act with that prudence and caution which the nature of the caſe required; and that, for her part,

ſhe would concur in every reaſonable meaſure I ſhould approve of; but, I muſt remember, ſhe was only a ſervant, and had very little due to her for wages, and not a penny beſides that; and that there muſt neceſſarily be a preparation made for the reception of the infant, when time ſhould produce it. I now began to ſee the abſolute neceſſity of all ſhe ſaid; but how to accompliſh it was not in me to comprehend.—My own ſmall matter of money was gone, and had been ſo a long time; we therefore agreed I ſhould write to my mother for a freſh ſupply: I did ſo, and, to my great confuſion, was anſwered by my former friend in the following words:

Son PETER,

YOUR mother and I are much ſurpriſed you ſhould write for money, having ſo amply provided for you; but as it is not many months to Chriſtmas, when poſſibly we may ſend for you home, you muſt make yourſelf eaſy till then; as a ſchool-boy, with all neceſſaries found him, can't have much occaſion for money. Your loving Father, *J. G.*

IMAGINE, if it is poſſible, my conſternation at the receipt of this letter. I began to think I ſhould be tricked out of what my father and grandfather had, with ſo much pains and induſtry, for many years been heaping up for me; and had a thouſand thoughts altogether, juſtling out each other; ſo could reſolve on nothing. I then ſhewed Patty the letter, and we both condoled my hard fortune but ſaw no remedy. Time wore away, and nothing done, or like to be, as I could ſee. For my part I was like one diſtracted, and no more able to aſſiſt, or counſel what ſhould be done, than a child in arms. At length poor Patty, who ſat thinking ſome time, began, with telling me ſhe had formed a ſcheme,

which in ſome meaſure might help us; but, fearing it might be diſagreeable to me, ſhe durſt not mention it, till I ſhould aſſure her, whatever I thought of that, I would think no worſe of her for propoſing it. This preparatory introduction ſtartled me a great deal; for it darted into my head ſhe waited for my concurrence to deſtroy the child; to which I could never have conſented. But upon my aſſuring her that I would not think the worſe of her for whatever ſhe ſhould propoſe, but freely give her my opinion upon it; ſhe told me, as ſhe could ſee no other way before us, but what tended to our diſgrace and ruin, if I would marry her, ſhe would immediately quit her place, and retire to her aunt, who brought her up from a child, and had enough prettily to live upon; who, ſhe did not doubt, would entertain her as my wife, but ſhe was aſſured, upon any other ſcore, or under any other name, would prove her moſt inveterate enemy. When Patty had made an end, I was glad to find it no worſe, and revolving matters a little in my mind, both as to affairs at home, and requeſted marriage, I concluded upon this latter, and had a great inclination to acquaint my mother of it, but was diverted from that, by ſuſpecting it might prove a good handle for my new father, to work with my mother ſome miſchief againſt me, ſo determined to marry forthwith, ſend Patty to her aunt's, and remain ſtill at the academy myſelf, till I ſhould ſee what turn things would take at home. Accordingly, the next day good part of Patty's wages went to tie the connubial knot, and to the honeſt parſon for a bribe to antedate the certificate; and ſhe very ſoon after took up the reſt, to defray her journey to her aunt's.

THOUGH Patty was within two months of her time, ſhe had ſo managed, that no one perceived it; and, getting ſafe to her aunt's, was delivered of a daughter,

of which ſhe wrote me word, and ſaid ſhe hoped to ſee me at the end of her month. How, think I, can ſhe expect to ſee me; money I have none; and then I deſpaired of leave for a journey, if I had it; and to go without leave, would only arm J. G. againſt me, as I perceived his intereſt and mine were very remote things; ſo I reſolved to quit all thoughts of a journey, and wait till opportunity better ſerved for ſeeing my wife and child, and our good aunt, to whom we were ſo much obliged. While theſe and ſuch like cogitations engroſſed my whole attention, I was moſt pleaſingly ſurprized one day, upon my return from a muſing walk, by the river ſide at the end of our garden, where I frequently got my taſks, to find Patty ſitting in the kitchen, with my old miſtreſs, my maſter's mother, who managed his houſe, he having been a widower many years. The ſight of her almoſt overcame me, as I had bolted into the kitchen, and was ſeen by my old miſtreſs, before I had ſeen Patty was with her. The old lady perceiving me diſcompoſed, enquired into the cauſe, which I directly imputed to the ſymptoms of an ague, that, I told her, I had felt upon me beſt part of the morning. She, a good motherly woman, feeling my pulſe, and ſatisfying herſelf of its diſorder, immediately ran to her cloſet to bring me a cordial, which ſhe aſſured me had done wonders in the like caſes; ſo that I had but juſt time to embrace Patty, and enquire after our aunt and daughter, before madam returned with the cordial. Having drank it, and given thanks, I was going to withdraw, but ſhe would not part with me ſo; for nothing leſs than my knowledge that this cordial was of her own making, from whence ſhe had the receipt, and an exact catalogue of the ſeveral cures it had done, would ſerve her turn; which, taking up full three quarters of an hour, gave room to Patty and me to enjoy each others glances for that time, to our

mutual ſatisfaction. At laſt, the old prattlebox having made a ſhort pauſe to recover breath, from the narrative the cordial, Mr Peter, ſays ſhe, you look as if you did not know poor Patty; ſhe has not left me ſo long that you ſhould forget her; ſhe is a good tight wench, and I was ſorry to part with her; but ſhe is out of place, ſhe ſays, and as that dirty creature Nan is gone, I think to take her again. I told her I well knew ſhe was judge of a good ſervant, and I did not doubt Patty was ſuch, if ſhe thought ſo; and then I made my exit, lighter in heart by a pound than I came.

I SHALL not tire you any farther with the amours between ſelf and Patty; but to let you know ſhe quited her place again, ſeven months after, upon the ſame ſcore.

CHAP. III.

Minds his ſtudies; informs his maſter of his mother's marriage, and uſage of him; hears of her death; makes his maſter his guardian; goes with him to take poſſeſſion of his eſtate; is informed all is given to his father-in-law; moral reflections on his condition, and on his father's crimes.

I WAS now near nineteen years of age, and though I had ſo much more in my head than my ſchool learning, I know not how it happened, but ever ſince the commencement of my amour with Patty, having ſomebody to diſburthen my mind to, and participate in my concerns, I had been much eaſier, and had kept true tally with my book, with more than uſual delight;

and being arrived to an age to comprehend what I heard and read, I could, from the general idea I had of things, form a pretty regular piece of Latin, without being able to repeat the very rules it was done by; ſo that I had the acknowledgment of my maſter for the beſt capacity he ever had under his tuition: This, he not ſparing frequently to mention it before me, was the accuteſt ſpur he could have applied to my induſtry; and now, having his good-will, I began to diſuſe ſet hours of exerciſe, but at my conveniency applied myſelf to my ſtudies as I beſt pleaſed, being always ſure to perform as much, or more, than he ever enjoined me, till I grew exceedingly in his confidence, and by reaſon of my age (though I was but ſmall, yet manly) I became rather his companion upon parties, than his direct pupil.

IT was upon one of theſe parties I took the opportunity to declare the diſſatisfaction I had at my mother's ſecond marriage. Sir, ſays I, ſurely I was of age to have known it firſt, eſpecially, conſidering the affection my mother had always ſhewn to me, and my never once having done the leaſt thing to diſoblige her; but Sir, ſaid I, ſomething elſe I fear is intended, by my mother's ſilence to me; for I have never received above three letters from her ſince I came here, which is now you know three years, and thoſe were within the firſt three months. I then ſhewed him the forementioned letter I received from my new father-in-law, and aſſured him that gave me the firſt hint of this ſecond marriage.

I FOUND, by the attention my maſter gave to my relation, he ſeemed to ſuſpect this marriage would prove detrimental to me; but not, on the ſudden, knowing what to ſay to it, he told me he would conſider of it;

and, by all means, adviſed me to write a very obliging letter to my new father, with my humble requeſt that he would pleaſe to order me home the next receſs of our learning. I did ſo, under my maſter's dictation; and not long after received an anſwer to the following effect:

Son PETER,

YOUR mother has been dead a good while; and as to your requeſt, it will be only expenſive, and of little uſe; for a perſon who muſt live by his ſtudies cannot apply to them too cloſely.

[redacted] letter, if I had a little hope left, quite ſubdued my fortitude, and well nigh reduced me to clay. However, with tears in my eyes, I ſhewed it to my maſter; who, good man, wiſhing me well; Peter, ſays he, what can this mean, here is ſome myſtery concealed in it; here is ſome ill deſign on foot; then taking the letter into his hand, a perſon who muſt live by his ſtudies, ſays he; here is more meant than we can think for. Why, have not you a pretty eſtate to live upon when it comes to your hands? Peter, ſays he, I would adviſe you to go to your father, and enquire how your affairs are left; but I am afraid to let you go alone, and will, when my ſtudents depart at Chriſtmas, accompany you myſelf, with all my heart; for, you muſt know, I have adviſed on your affair already, and find you are of age to chuſe yourſelf a guardian, who may be any relation or friend you can confide in, and may ſee you have juſtice done you. I immediately thanked him for the hint, and begged him to accept of the truſt, as my only friend, having very few, if any near relations; this he with great readineſs complied with, and was admitted accordingly.

So ſoon as our ſcholars were gone home, my maſter lending me a horſe, we ſet out together, to poſſeſs ourſelves of all my father's real eſtate, and ſuch part of the perſonal as he had been adviſed would belong to me. Well, we arrived at the old houſe, but were not received with ſuch extraordinary tokens of friendſhip, as would give the leaſt room to ſuppoſe we were welcome. For my part, all I ſaid, or could ſay, was, that I was very ſorry for my mother's death. My father replied, ſo was he. Here we pauſed, and might have ſat ſilent till this time for me, if my maſter, a grave man, who had ſeen the world, and was unwilling any part of our time there, which he gueſſed would be ſhort, ſhould be loſt, had not broke ſilence. Mr G. ſays he, I ſee the loſs of Maſter Wilkin's mother puts him under ſome confuſion; ſo that you will excuſe me, as his preceptor and friend, in making ſome enquiry how his affairs ſtand, and how his effects are diſpoſed; as I don't doubt you have taken care to ſchedule every thing that will be coming to him; and though he is not yet of the neceſſary age for taking upon himſelf the management of his eſtate, he is nevertheleſs of capacity to underſtand the nature and *quantum* of it, and to ſhew his approbation of the diſpoſition of it, as if he was a year or two older. During this diſcourſe, Mr G. turned pale, then reddened, was going to interrupt, then checked himſelf; but however, kept ſilence, till my maſter had done; when, with a ſneer, he replied, Sir, I muſt own myſelf a great ſtranger to your diſcourſe; nor can I, for my life, imagine what your harangue tends to; but ſure I am, I know of no eſtate, real or perſonal, or any thing elſe, belonging to young Mr Wilkins, to make a ſchedule of, as you call it: But this I know, his mother had an eſtate in land, near two hundred a year, and alſo a good ſum of money, when I married her; but the eſtate ſhe ſettled on me before

her marriage, to diſpoſe of after her deceaſe as I ſaw fit; and her money and goods are all come to my ſole uſe as her huſband.——I was juſt ready to drop while Mr G. gave this relation, and was not able to reply a word; but my maſter, though ſufficiently ſhocked at what he had heard, replied, Sir, I am informed the eſtate, and alſo the money you mention, was Mr Wilkins's father's at his death; and I am ſurprized to think any one ſhould have a better title to them than my pupil, his only child. Sir, ſays Mr G. you are deceived; and though what you ſay ſeems plauſible enough, and is in ſome parts true, as that the late Mr Wilkins had ſuch an eſtate, and ſome hundreds, I may ſay thouſands, at his death, yet you ſeem ignorant that he made a deed juſt before entering into the fatal rebellion, by which he gave my late wife both the eſtate, money, and every thing elſe he had, abſolutely, without any conditions whatſoever; all which, on his unhappy execution, ſhe enjoyed, and now of right, as I told you before, belongs to me; however, as I have no child, if Peter behaves well under your direction, I have thoughts of paying another year's board for him, and then he muſt ſhift for himſelf.

Oh! cried I, for the mercy of ſome ſavage beaſt to devour me! Is this what I have been cockered up for! Why was I not placed out to ſome laborious craft, where I might have drudged for bread in my proper ſtation! But I fear it is too late to enquire into what is paſt, and muſt ſubmit.

Mr maſter, good man, was thunderſtruck at what he had heard; and finding our buſineſs done there, we took our leaves, after Mr G. had again repeated, that if I behaved well, my preceptor ſhould keep me another year, which was all I muſt expect from him; and

at my departure gave me a crown piece, which I then durſt not refuſe, for fear of offending my maſter.

We made the beſt of our way home again to my tutor's, where I ſtayed but a week, to conſider what I ſhould do with myſelf. In this time he did all he could to comfort me, telling me, if I would ſtay with him and become his uſher, he would compleat my learning for nothing, and allow me a ſalary for my trouble: But my heart was too lofty to think of becoming an uſher, within ſo little a way from mine own eſtate in other hands. However, ſince I had not a penny of money to endeavour at recovering my right with, I told my maſter I would conſider of his propoſal.

During my ſtay with him, he uſed all methods to make me as eaſy as poſſible; and frequently moralized with ſo much effect, that I was almoſt convinced I ought to ſubmit, and be content. Amongſt the reſt of his diſcourſe, he endeavoured to ſhew me one day, after I had been loudly condemning my cruel fortune, and ſaying I was born to be unhappy, that I was miſtaken, if I thought or imagined it was chance or accident that had been againſt me, when I complained of fortune; for, ſays he, Peter, there is nothing done below, but is at leaſt fore-known, if not decreed above; and our buſineſs in life is to believe ſo: Not that I would have ſuch belief make us careleſs, and think it to no purpoſe to ſtrive, as ſome do, who being perſuaded that our actions are not in our own choice, but that, being preſſed by an irreſiſtable decree, we are forced to act this or that, fancy we muſt be neceſſarily happy or miſerable hereafter: Or as others, who for fear of falling upon that ſhocking principle, would even deprive the Almighty of foreknowledge, leſt it ſhould conſequentially amount to a decree; for, ſay they, what is fore-

known, will, and must be: But I would have you act so, as that, let either of these tenets be true, you may still be sure of making yourself easy and happy: And for that purpose let me recommend to you a uniform life of justice and piety, always chusing the good rather than the bad side of every action; for this, say they what they will to the contrary, is not above the power of a reasonable being to practise; and doing so, you may without scruple say, if there is foreknowledge of my actions, or they are decreed, I then am one who is foreknown or decreed to be happy: And this, without further speculation, you will find the only means always to keep you so; for all men, of all denominations, fully allow this happy effect to follow good actions. Again, Peter, a person acting in a vicious course, with such an opinion in his head as above, must surely be very miserable, as his very actions themselves must pronounce the decree against him: Whilst therefore we have not heard the decree read, you see we may easily give sentence whether it be for good or evil to us, by the tenour and course of our own actions.

You are not now to learn, Peter, that the crimes of the father are often punished in the children, often in the father himself, sometimes in both, and not seldom in neither in this life; and though at first one should think the future punishment annexed to bad actions was sufficient, still it is necessary some should suffer here also for an example to others; we being much more affected with what the eye sees, than what the heart only meditates upon.

Now, to bring it to our own case:—Your father, Peter, rose against the lawful magistrate, to deprive him (it matters not that he was a bad one) of his lawful power. Your father's policy was such, and his de-

ſign ſo well laid, as he thought, that upon any ill ſucceſs to himſelf, he had ſecured his eſtate to go in the way of all others he could wiſh to have it, and ſits down very well contented, that, happen what would, he ſhould bite the government, in preventing the forfeiture. But lo his policy is as a wall of ſand, blown down with a puff, for it is to you it ought, even himſelf being umpire, to have come, as no one would think he could prize any before you his own child. Now, could he look from the grave, and know what paſſes here, and ſee Mr G. in poſſeſſion of all he fancied he had ſecured for you, what a weak and ſhort-ſighted creature would he find himſelf. If it be ſaid he did not know he ſhould have a child, then herein appears God's policy beyond man's; for he knew it, and has ſo ordered, that that child ſhould be diſinherited; for, by the way, Peter, take this for a maxim, wherever the firſt principle of an action is ill, no good conſequence can poſſibly ever be an attendant on it. Could he, as I ſaid before, but look up and ſee you, his only child, undone, by the very inſtrument he deſigned for your ſecurity, how pungent would be his anxiety. I ſay, Peter, though there is ſomething ſo unaccountable to human wiſdom in ſuch events of things, yet there is ſomething therein ſo reaſonable and juſt withal, that by a prying eye the Supreme hand may very viſibly be ſeen in them. Now this being plainly the caſe before us, and herein the glory of the Almighty exalted, reſt content under it, and let not this diſappointment, befallen you for your father's faults, be attended with others ſent down for your own; but remember this, the hand that depreſſes a man is no leſs able to exalt and eſtabliſh him.

CHAP. IV.

Departs ſecretly from his maſter; travels to Briſtol; religious thoughts by the way; enters on ſhipboard, and is made Captain's ſteward.

I SEEMED to be very well ſatisfied whilſt my maſter was ſpeaking; but though I thought he talked like an angel, my former uneaſineſs ſeized me at parting with him. In ſhort, without more conſideration, I roſe in the morning early and marched off; having firſt wrote to my wife at her aunt's, relating the ſtate of the caſe to her, with my reſolution to leave England the firſt opportunity; giving her what comfort I could, aſſuring her, if I ever was a gainer in life, ſhe ſhould not fail to be a partaker; and promiſing alſo to let her know where I ſettled. I walked at a great rate, for fear my maſter's kindneſs ſhould prompt him to ſend after me; and taking the by-ways, I reached by dark night a little village, where I reſolved to halt. Upon enquiry, I found myſelf thirty-five miles from my maſter's.—I had eaten nothing all day, and was very hungry and weary, but my crown piece was as yet whole; however, I fed ſparingly, being overpreſſed with the diſtreſs of my affairs, and the confuſion of my thoughts.—I ſlept that night tolerably well; but the morning brought its face of horror with it. I had enquired over night where I was, and been informed that I was [illegible] above ſixteen miles from Briſtol, for which place I then reſolved. At my ſetting out in the morning, after I had walked about three miles, and had recollected a little my maſter's laſt diſcourſe, I found by degrees my ſpirit grew calmer than it had been ſince I left Mr G. at my houſe, (as I ſhall ever call it) and looking into myſelf for the cauſe, found

another ſet of thoughts were preparing a paſſage into my mind, which did not carry half the dread and terror with them that their predeceſſors had; for I began to caſt aſide the difficulties and apprehenſions I before felt in my way, and, encouraging the preſent motions, ſoon became ſenſible of the benefit of a virtuous education; and though what I had hitherto done in the immediate ſervice of God, I muſt own had been performed from force, cuſtom, and habit, and without the leaſt attention to the object of the duty; yet, as under my mother at home, and my maſter at the academy, I had been always uſed to ſay my prayers, as they called it, morning and night, I began with a ſort of ſuperſtitious reflection, to accuſe myſelf of having omitted that duty the night before, and alſo at my ſetting out in the morning, and very much to blame myſelf for it; and at the ſame inſtant even wondred at myſelf for that blame.—What, ſays I, is the real uſe of this praying? and to whom or to what do we pray? I ſee no one to pray to, neither have I ever thought that my prayers would be anſwered. It is true they are worded as if we prayed to God; but he is in heaven; does he concern himſelf with us, who can do him no ſervice? Can I think all my prayers that I have ſaid from day to day, ſo many years, have been heard by him? No ſure; if they had, I ſhould ſcarce have ſuſtained this hard fate in my fortune. But hold, how have I prayed to him? Have I as earneſtly prayed to him as I uſed to petition my mother for any thing when I wanted it againſt her inclination? No, I cannot ſay I have. And would my mother have granted me ſuch things, if ſhe had not thought I from my heart deſired them, when I uſed to be ſo earneſt with her? No ſurely, I cannot ſay ſhe had any reaſon for it. But I had her indeed before me; now I have not God in my view, he is in heaven: Yet, let me ſee, my maſter (and I cannot help

thinking he must know) used to say, that God is a Spirit, and not confined by the incumbrance of a body as we are; now, if it is so, why may not he virtually be present with me, though I do not perceive him? Why may he not be at once in heaven, and elsewhere? For, if he consists not of parts, nothing can circumscribe him. And truly I believe it must be so; for if he is of that supreme power as he is represented, he could never act in so unconfined a capacity, under the restraint of place; but if he is an operative and purely spiritual being, then I can see no reason why his virtual essence should not be diffused through all nature; and then, which I begin to think most likely, why should not I suppose him ever present with me, and able to hear me? And why should not I, when I pray, have a full idea of the being, though not of any corporeal parts or form of God; and so have actually somewhat to be intent upon in my prayers? and not do as I have hitherto done; say so many words only upon my knees, which I cannot help thinking may be as well without either sense or meaning in themselves, as without a proper object in my mind to direct them unto.

These thoughts agitated me at least two miles, working stronger and stronger in me; till at length, bursting into tears, Have I been doing nothing, says I, in the sight of God, under the name of prayers, for so many years? Yes, it is certainly so. Well, by the grace of God, it shall be so no longer, I will try somewhat more. So looking round about me, to see if I was quite alone, I stept into an adjoining copse, and could scarce refrain falling on my knees, till I came to a proper place for kneeling in. I then poured forth my whole soul and spirit to God; and all my strength, and every member, every faculty, was to the utmost

employed, for a conſiderable time, in that moſt agreeable as well as uſeful duty. I would indeed have began with my accuſtomed prayers, and had repeated ſome words of them, when, as though againſt, and contrary to my deſign, I was carried away by ſuch rapturous effuſions, that, to this hour, when I reflect thereon, I cannot believe but I was moved to them by a much more than human impulſe. However, this extaſy did not laſt above a quarter of an hour; but it was conſiderably longer before my ſpirits ſubſided to their uſual frame.——When I had a little compoſed myſelf, how was I altered, how did I condemn myſelf for all my paſt diſquiet; what calm thanks did I return for the eaſe and ſatisfaction of mind I then enjoyed; and coming to a ſmall rivulet, I drank an hearty draught of water, and contentedly proceeding on my journey, I reached Briſtol about four o'clock in the afternoon. Having refreſhed myſelf, I went the ſame evening to the quay, to enquire what ſhips were in the river, whither bound, and when they would depart. My buſineſs was with the ſailors, of whom there were at that time great numbers there; but I could meet with no employ, though I gave out I would gladly enter myſelf before the maſt. After I had done the beſt I could, but without ſucceſs, I returned to the little houſe I had dined at, and went to bed very penſive. I did not forget my prayers; but I could by no means be roufed to ſuch devotion as I felt in the morning. Next day I walked again to the quay, aſking all I met, who looked like ſea-faring men, for employment, but could hear of none, there being many waiting for births; and I feared my appearance (which was not ſo mean as moſt of that ſort of gentry's is) would prove no ſmall diſappointment to my preferment that way. At laſt, being out of heart with my frequent repulſes, I went to a landing-place juſt by, and as I aſked ſome

ſailors who were putting two gentlemen on ſhore, if they wanted a hand on board their ſhip, one of the gentlemen, whom I afterwards found to be the maſter of a veſſel bound to the coaſt of Africa, turned back, and looking earneſtly on me, young man, ſays he, do you want employment on board? I immediately made him a bow, and anſwered, yes Sir. Said he, there is no talking in this weather, for it then blew almoſt a ſtorm, but ſtep into that tavern, pointing to the place, and I'll be with you preſently.—I went thither, and not long after came my future maſter. He aſked me many queſtions, but the firſt was, Whether I had been at ſea? I told him no; but I did not doubt ſoon to learn the duty of a ſailor. He then looked on my hand, and, ſhaking his head, told me it would not do, for I had too ſoft a hand. I told him I was determined for the ſea, and that my hand and heart ſhould go together; and I hoped my hand would ſoon harden, though not my heart. He then told me, it was pity to take ſuch a pretty young fellow before the maſt; but if I underſtood accounts tolerably, and could write a good hand, he would make me his ſteward, and make it worth my while. I anſwered in the affirmative, joyfully accepting his offer; but on his aſking me where my cheſt was (for, ſays he, if the wind had not been ſo ſtrong againſt me, I had fallen down the river this morning) I looked very blank, and plainly told him I had no other ſtores than I carried on my back. The captain ſmiled. Says he, young man, I ſee you are a novice; why the meaneſt ſailor in my ſhip has a cheſt, at leaſt, and perhaps ſomething in it; come, ſays he, my lad, I like your looks, be diligent and honeſt, I'll let you have a little money to ſet you out, and deduct it in your pay. He was then pulling out his purſe, when I begged him, as he ſeemed to ſhew me ſo great a kindneſs, that he would order ſomebody to buy what

neceſſaries he knew I ſhould want, for me, or I ſhould be under as great a difficulty to know what to get, and where to buy them, as I ſhould have been at for want of them. He commended my prudence, and ſaid he would buy them and ſend them on board himſelf; ſo bid me trouble myſelf no more about them, but go to the ſhip in the return of his boat, and ſtay there till he came; giving me a ticket to the boot's crew to take me in. When I came to the ſhore, the boat was gone off, and at a good diſtance; but I hailed them, and ſhewing my ticket, they put back, and took me ſafe to the ſhip, heartily glad that I was entered upon my new ſervice.

CHAP. V.

His firſt entertainment on board; ſets ſail; his ſickneſs; engagement with a French privateer; is taken and laid in irons. Twenty-one priſoners turned adrift in a ſmall boat, with only two days proviſion.

BEING once on board, and in pay, I thought I was a man for myſelf, and ſet about conſidering how to behave; and no body knowing as yet upon what footing I came on board, they took me for a paſſenger, as my dreſs did not at all beſpeak me a ſailor; ſo every one, as I ſauntered about, had ſomething to ſay to me. By and by comes a pert young fellow up; Sir, ſays he, your ſervant; what, I ſee our captain has picked up a paſſenger at laſt. Paſſenger, ſays I, you are pleaſed to be merry Sir, I am no paſſenger. Why, pray, ſays he, what may you be then? Sir, ſays I, the captain's ſteward. You impertinent puppy, ſays he,

what an anſwer you give me; you the captain's ſteward; no Sir, that place, I can aſſure you, is in better hands, and away he turned. I knew not what to think of it, but was terribly afraid I ſhould draw myſelf into ſome ſcrape. By and by others aſked me, ſome one thing, ſome another, and I was very cautious what anſwers I made them, for fear of offence; till a graviſh ſailor came and ſat down by me, and, after talking of the weather, and other indifferent matters, pray, ſays I, Sir, who is that gentleman that was ſo affronted at me ſoon after I came on board? O, ſays he, a proud inſignificant fellow, the captain's ſteward; but don't mind him, ſays he, he uſes the captain himſelf as bad; they have had high words juſt before the captain went on ſhore; and had he uſed me as he did him, I ſhould have made no ceremony of tipping him overboard—a raſcal. Says I, you ſurpriſe me, for the captain ſent me on board to be his ſteward, and agreed with me about it this afternoon. Huſh, ſays he, I ſee how it will go; the captain, if that is the caſe, will diſcharge him when he comes on board; and indeed I believe he would not have kept him ſo long, but we have waited for a wind, and he could not provide himſelf.

THE captain came on board at night, and the firſt thing he did was to demand the keys of Mr Steward, which he gave to me, and ordered him on ſhore.

THE next morning the captain went on ſhore himſelf, but the wind chopping about, and ſtanding fair about noon, he returned then with my cheſt, and before night we were got into ſailing order, and before the wind, with a briſk gale.

WHAT happened the firſt fourteen days of our paſſage I know not, having been all that time ſo ſick and

weak I could ſcarcely keep life and ſoul together; but after grew better and better. We proſecuted our voyage, touching for about a week at the Madeiras in our way. The captain grew very fond of me, and never put me to hard duty, and I paſſed my time under his favour very pleaſantly. One evening, being within ſixty leagues of the Cape of Palmes, calm weather, but the little wind we had againſt us, one of our men ſpied a ſail, and gave the captain notice of it. He not ſuſpecting danger, minded it little, and we made what way the wind would permit; but night coming on, and the calm continuing, about peep of day we perceived we were infallibly fallen in with a French privateer, who, hoiſting French colours, called out to us to ſtrike. Our captain had ſcarce time to conſider what to do, they were ſo near us; but as he had twenty-two men on board, and eight guns he could bring to, he called all hands on deck, and telling them the conſequence of a ſurrender, aſked them if they would ſtand by him. One and all ſwore they would fight the ſhip to the bottom, rather than fall into the privateer's hands. The captain immediately gave the word for a clear deck, prepared his fire-arms, and begged them to be active, and obey orders; and perceiving the privateer outnumbered our hands by abundance, he commanded all the ſmall arms to be brought upon deck loaded, and to run out as many of the ſhip's guns as ſhe could bring to on one ſide, and to charge them all with ſmall ſhot, then ſtand to till he gave directions. The privateer being a light ſhip, and a ſmall breeze ariſing, run up cloſe to us; firſt firing one gun then another, ſtill calling out to us to ſtrike; but we neither returned fire or anſwer, till he came almoſt within piſtol ſhot of us, and ſeeing us a ſmall veſſel, thought to board us directly; but then our captain ordered a broadſide, and immediately all hands to come on deck, himſelf ſtand-

ing there at the time of our firſt fire with his fuſee in his hand, and near him I ſtood with another. We killed eight men, and wounded ſeveral others. The privateer then fired a broadſide through and through us. By this time our hands were all on deck, and the privateer puſhing in hopes to grapple and board us, we gave them a volley from thence that did good execution; and then all hands to the ſhip's guns again, except four, who were left along with me to charge the ſmall arms. It is incredible how ſoon they had fired the great guns and were on deck again. This laſt fire being with ball, raked the privateer miſerably. Then we fired the ſmall arms, and away to the ſhip's guns. This we did three times ſucceſſively, without loſs of a man; and I believe if we could held it once more, and no aſſiſtance had come to the privateer, ſhe had ſheered quite off: But our captain ſpying a ſail at ſome diſtance behind the privateer, who lay to windward of us, and ſeeing by his glaſs it was a Frenchman, was almoſt diſmayed; the ſame ſight put courage into our enemies, who thereupon redoubled the attack, and, the firſt volley of their ſmall arms ſhot our captain in the breaſt, upon which he dropped dead without ſtirring. I need not ſay that ſight ſhocked me exceedingly: Indeed it diſconcerted the whole action; and though our mate, a man of good courage and experience, did all that a brave man could do to animate the men, they apparently drooped, and the loſs of the ſhip became inevitable; ſo we ſtruck, and the Frenchman boarded us.

DURING the later part of the engagement we had two men killed, and five wounded, who died afterwards of their wounds. We who were alive were all ordered on board the Frenchman, who, after rifling us, chained us two and two, and turned us into the

hold. Our veſſel was then ranſacked; and the other privateer, who had ſuffered much the day before in an engagement with an Engliſh twenty-gun ſhip of war, coming up, the prize was ſent by her into port, where ſhe herſelf was to refit.

IN this condition did I, and fourteen of our crew, lie for ſix weeks, till the fetters on our legs had almoſt eaten to the bone, and the ſtench of the place had well nigh ſuffocated us.

THE Glorieux, for that was the name of the privateer who took us, ſaw nothing further in five weeks worth her notice, which very much diſcouraged the men; and conſulting together, it was agreed to cruize more northward, between Sierra Leon and Cape de Verd; but about noon next day they ſpied a ſail coming W. N. W. with a freſh gale. The captain thereupon ordered all to be ready, and ly by for her: But though ſhe diſcerned us, ſhe kept her way, bearing only more ſouthward; when the wind ſhifting to N. E. ſhe ran for it full before the wind, and we after her with all the ſail we could crowd; and though ſhe was a very good ſailer, we gained upon her, being laden, and before night came pretty well up with her; but, being a large ſhip, and the evening hazy, we did not chuſe to engage her till morning. The next morning we found ſhe was ſlunk away; but we fetched her up, and, hoiſting French colours, fired a ſhot, which ſhe not anſwering, our captain run along-ſide of her, and fired a broadſide; then ſlackening upon her, a hard engagement enſued; the ſhot thumping ſo againſt our ſhip, that we priſoners, who had nothing to do in the action, expected death, one or other of us, every moment. The merchantman was ſo heavy loaded, and drew ſo much water, that ſhe was very unwieldy in action; ſo

after a fight of two hours, when moſt of her rigging and maſts were cut and wounded, ſhe ſtruck Twelve men were ſent on board her, and her captain and ſeveral officers were ordered on board us.

THERE were thirty-eight perſons in her, including paſſengers, all of whom, except five, and the like number which had been killed in the action, were ſent chained into the hold to us, who had lain there almoſt ſix weeks. This prize put Monſieur into good heart, and determined him to return home with her. But in two days time his new acquiſition was found to have leaked ſo faſt near the bottom, that before they were aware of it the water was riſen ſome feet. Several hands were employed to find out the leak, but all aſſerted it was too low to be come at; and as the pumps, with all the labour the priſoners (who were the perſons put to it) could uſe, would not reduce it, but it ſtill increaſed, they removed what goods they could into the privateer, and before they could unload it the prize ſunk.

THE next thing they conſulted upon was, what to do with the priſoners, who, by the loſs of the prize, were now grown too numerous to be truſted in the privateer; fearing too, as they were now ſo far out at ſea, by the great addition of mouths, they might ſoon be brought to ſhort allowance; it was, on both accounts, reſolved to give us the prize's boat, which they had ſaved, and turn us adrift to ſhift for ourſelves. There were in all forty-three of us; but the privateer having loſt ſeveral of their own men in the two engagements, they looked us over, and picking out twenty-two of us who were the moſt likely fellows for their purpoſe, the remaining twenty-one were committed to

the boat, with about two days proviſion and a ſmall matter of ammunition, and turned out.

CHAP. VI.

The boat two hundred leagues from land, makes no way; but drives more to ſea by the wind; the people live nine days at quarter allowance; four die with hunger the twelfth day; five more the fourteenth day; on the fifteenth they eat one juſt dead; want of water exceſſive; ſpy a ſail; are taken up; work their paſſage to the African ſhore; are ſent on a ſecret expedition; are waylaid; taken ſlaves, and ſent up the country.

WHEN we who were in the boat came to reflect on our condition, the proſpect before us appeared very melancholy; though we had at firſt readily enough embraced the offer, rather than periſh in ſo much miſery as we ſuffered in our loathſome confinement. We now judged we were above two hundred leagues from land, in about eight degrees N. Latitude; and blowing N. E. a pretty ſtiff gale, we could make no way, but rather loſt, for we aimed at ſome port in Africa, having neither ſail, compaſs, or any other inſtrument to direct us; ſo that all the obſervation we could make was by the ſun for running ſouthward, or as the wind carried us, for we had loſt the North Pole. As we had little above two days proviſions, we perceived a neceſſity of almoſt ſtarving voluntarily, to avoid doing it quite, ſeeing it muſt be many days before we could reach ſhore, if ever we did, having driven a great deal more ſouthward than we nay, unleſs a ſudden change happened, we were

of perishing, unless delivered by some ship that providence might send in our way. In short, the ninth day came, but no relief with it; and though we had lived at quarter allowance, and but just saved life, our food, except a little water, was all gone, and this caused us quite to despair. On the twelfth day four of our company died with hunger, in a very miserable way, and yet the survivors had not strength left to move them to pity their fellows. In truth, we had sat still, attempting nothing in several days, as we found, that unless the wind shifted, we only consumed the little strength we had left to no manner of purpose. On the fourteenth day, and in the night, five more died, and a sixth was near expiring; and yet we the survivors were so indolent, we would scarce lend a hand to throw them overboard. On the fifteenth day in the morning, our carpenter, weak as he was, started up, and as the sixth man was just dead, cut his throat, and, whilst warm, would let out what blood would flow; then pulling off his old jacket, invited us to dinner, and cutting a large slice off the corpse, devoured it with as much seeming relish as if it had been ox beef. His example prevailed with the rest of us, one after another, to taste and eat; and as there had been a heavy dew or rain in the night, and we had spread out every thing we had of linen and woolen to receive it, we were a little refreshed by wringing our cloaths, and sipping what came from them; after which we covered them up from the sun, stowing them all close to keep in the moisture, which served us to suck at for two days after, a little and a little at a time; for now we were in greater distress for water than for meat. It has surprised me many times since, to think how we could make so light a thing of eating our fellow creature just dead before our eyes; but I'll assure you, when we had once tasted, we looked on the blessing to be so great, that we cut and

eat with as little remorſe as we ſhould have had for feeding on the beſt meat in an Engliſh market: And moſt certainly when this corpſe had failed, if another had not dropped by fair means, we ſhould have uſed foul, by murdering one of our number as a ſupply for the reſt.

WATER, as I ſaid before, to moiſten our mouths, was now our greateſt hardſhip, for every man had ſo often drank his own, that we voided ſcarce any thing but blood, and that but a few drops at a time; our mouths and tongues were quite flead with drought, and our teeth juſt falling from our jaws; for though we had tried, by placing all the dead men's jackets and ſhirts one over another, to ſtrain ſome of the ſea water thro' them by ſmall quantities, yet that would not deprive it of its pernicious qualities; and though it refreſhed a little in going down, we were ſo ſick, and ſtrained ourſelves ſo much after it, that it came up again, and made us more miſerable than before. Our corpſe now ſtunk ſo, what was left of it, that we could no longer bear it on board, and every man began to look with an evil eye on his fellow, to think whoſe turn it would be next; for the carpenter had ſtarted the queſtion, and preached us into the neceſſity of it, and we had agreed the next morning to put it to the lot who ſhould be the ſacrifice. In this diſtreſs of thought, it was ſo ordered by good providence, that on the twenty-firſt day we thought we ſpied a ſail coming from the N. W. which cauſed us to delay our lots, till we ſhould ſee whether it would diſcover us or not; we held up ſome jackets upon our oars to be ſeen as far off as we could, but had ſo little ſtrength left, we could make no way towards it; however, it happened to direct its courſe ſo much to our relief, that an hour before ſunſet it was within a league of us, but ſeemed to bear away more

eaſtward, and our fear was, that they ſhould not know our diſtreſs, for we were not able to make any noiſe from our throats that might be heard fifty yards; but the carpenter, who was ſtill the beſt man amongſt us, with much ado getting one of the guns to go off, in leſs than half an hour ſhe came up with us, and ſeeing our deplorable condition, took us all on board, to the number of eleven. Though no methods were uneſſayed for our recovery, four more of us died in as many days. When the remaining ſeven of us came a little to ourſelves, we found our deliverers were Portugueſe, bound for St Salvadore. We told the captain, we begged he would let us work our paſſage with him, be it where it would, to ſhore; and then, if we could be of no further ſervice to him, we did not doubt getting into Europe again: But in the voyage, as we did him all the ſervice in our power, we pleaſed him ſo well, that he engaged us to ſtay with him to work the ſhip home again, he having loſt ſome hands by fevers ſoon after his ſetting ſail.

We arrived ſafe in port, and in a few days the captain, who had a ſecret enterpriſe to take in hand, hired a country coaſting veſſel, and ſent her ſeventeen leagues further on the coaſt for orders from ſome factory or ſettlement there. I was one of the nine men who were deſtined to conduct her, but not underſtanding Portugueſe, I knew little of the buſineſs we went upon. We were to coaſt it all the way, but on the tenth day, juſt at ſunriſe, we fell in with a fleet of boats which had way-laid us, and were taken priſoners. Being carried aſhore, we were conducted a long way up the country, where we were impriſoned, and almoſt ſtarved: Though I never knew the meaning of it, nor did any of us, unleſs the mate, who we heard was carried up the country much further, to Angola;

but we never heard more of him, though we were told he would be ſent back to us.

HERE we remained under confinement almoſt three months, at the end of which time our keeper told us we were to be removed; and coupling us two and two together, ſent a guard with us to Angola; when, croſſing a large river, we were ſet to work in removing the rubbiſh and ſtones of a caſtle, or fortreſs, which had been lately demoliſhed by an earthquake and lightning. Here we continued about five months, being very ſparingly dieted, and locked up every night.

THIS place however I thought a paradiſe to our former dungeon; and as we were not over-worked, we made our lives comfortable enough, having the air all day to refreſh us from the heat, and not wanting for company, for there were at leaſt three hundred of us about the whole work; and I often fancied myſelf at the Tower of Babel, each laboured almoſt ſpeaking in a language of his own.

TOWARDS the latter end of our work, our keepers grew more and more remiſs in their care of us. At my firſt coming thither I had contracted a familiarity with one of the natives, but of a different kingdom, who was then a ſlave with me; and he and I being able tolerably to underſtand each other, he hinted to me one day the deſire he had of ſeeing his own country and family, who neither knew whether he was dead or alive, or where he was, ſince he had left them, ſeven years before, to make war in this kingdom; and inſinuated, that as he had taken a great liking to me, if I would endeavour to eſcape with him, and we ſucceeded, he would provide for me: For, ſays he, you ſee now our work is almoſt over, we are but ſlightly guarded, and

if we ſtay till this jobb is once finiſhed, we may be commanded to ſome new works at the other end of the kingdom for ought we know, ſo that our labours will only ceaſe with our lives; and, for my part, immediate death in the attempt of liberty, is to me preferable to a lingering life of ſlavery.

THESE, and ſuch like arguments, prevailed on me to accompany him, as he had told me he had travelled moſt of the country before in the wars of the different nations; ſo having taken our reſolutions, the following evening, ſoon after our days work, and before the time came for locking up, we withdrew from the reſt, but within hearing; thinking, if we ſhould then be miſſed, and called, we would appear, and make ſome excuſe for our abſence, but if not, we ſhould have the whole night before us.

WHEN we were firſt put upon this work we were called over ſingly, by name, morning and evening, to be let out and in, and were very narrowly obſerved in our motions; but not one of us having been ever abſent, our actions were at length much leſs minded than before, and the ceremony of calling us over was frequently omitted; ſo that we concluded if we got away unobſerved the firſt night, we ſhould be out of the reach of purſuers by the next, which was the ſooneſt it was poſſible for them to overtake us, as we propoſed to travel the firſt part of our journey with the utmoſt diſpatch.

CHAP. VII.

The author's escape with Glanlepze, a native; their hardships in travel; plunder of a cottage; his fears; adventure with a crocodile; passage of a river; adventure with a lioness and whelp; arrive at Glanlepze's house; the trial of Glanlepze's wife's constancy; the tender meeting of her and her husband; the author's reflections thereupon.

HAVING now set out with all possible speed, we seemed to each other as joyful as we could; tho' it cannot be supposed we had no fears in our minds the first part of our journey, for we had many; but as our way advanced, our fears subsided; and having, with scarce any delay, pushed forwards for the first twenty-four hours, nature then began to have two very pressing demands upon us, food and rest: But as one of them was absolutely out of our power to comply with, she contented herself with the other, till we should be better able to supply her, and gave a further time till the next day.

THE next morning found us very empty and sharp set, though a very sound night's rest had contributed its utmost to refresh us. But what added much to our discomfort was, that though our whole subsistance must come from fruits, there was not a tree to be found at a less distance than twelve leagues, in the open rocky country we were then in; but a good draught of excellent water we met with did us extraordinary service, and sent us with much better courage to the woods, though they were quite out of the way of our rout; there, by divers kinds of fruits, which though my companion knew very well, I was quite a stranger

to, we satisfied our hunger for the present, and took a moderate supply for another opportunity. This retarded our journey very much, for in so hard travel every pound weighed six before night.

I CANNOT say this journey, though bad enough, would have been so discouraging, but for the trouble of fetching our provisions so far; and then, if we meant not to loose half the next day in the same manner, we must double load ourselves, and delay our progress by that means; but we still went on, and in about eight days got quite clear of Angola.

ON the eighth day my companion, whose name was Glanlepze, told me we were very near the confines of Congo, but there was one little village still in Angola, by which we must pass within half a league; and, if I would agree to it, he would go see what might be got there to supply ourselves with. I told him I was in an unknown world, and would follow wherever he should lead me; but asked him if he was not afraid of the people, as he was not of that country; he told me, as there had been wars between them and his country for assisting their neighbours of Congo, he was not concerned for any mischief he should do them or they him; but, says he, you have a knife in your pocket, and with that we will cut two stout clubs, and then follow me, fear nothing.

WE soon cut our clubs, and marching on in the midst of some small shrubs, and a few scattering trees, we saw a little hovel, larger indeed, but worse contrived than an English hogsty, to which we boldly advanced, and Glanlepze entering first, saluted an old man who was lying on a parcel of rushes. The man attempted to run away, but Glanlepze stopped him, and we tied

his hands and feet. He then ſet up ſuch a hideous howl, that had not Glanlepze threatned to murder him, and prepared to do it, he would have raiſed the whole village upon us; but we quieted him, and rumaging to find proviſion, which was all we wanted, we by good luck ſpied beſt part of a goat hanging up behind a large mat at the further end of the room. By this time in comes a woman with two children very ſmall. This was the old man's daughter, about five and twenty. Glanlepze bound her alſo, and laid her by the old man, but the two children we ſuffered to lie untied. We then examined her, who told us the old man was her father, and that her huſband having killed a goat that morning, was gone to carry part of it to his ſiſter; that they had little or no corn; and finding we wanted victuals, ſhe told us there was an earthen pot we might boil ſome of the goat in if we pleaſed.

HAVING now ſeen all that was to be had, we were going to make up our bundle, when a muletto very gently put his head into the doorway, him Glanlepze immediately ſeized, and bidding me fetch the great mat and the goat's fleſh, he in the mean time put a long rope he found there about the beaſt's neck, and laying the mat upon him, we packed up the goat's fleſh and a little corn in a calabaſh ſhell, and then turning up the mat round about, ſkewered it together, and over all we tied the earthen pot; Glanlepze crying out at every thing we loaded, *It is no hurt to plunder an enemy*; and ſo we marched off.

I OWN I had greater apprehenſions from this adventure than from any thing before; for, ſays I, if the woman's huſband returns ſoon, or if ſhe or her father can releaſe themſelves, they will raiſe the whole village upon us, and we are undone: But Glanlepze laughed

at me, saying, we had not an hour's walk out of the Angola dominions; and that the king of Congo was at war with them, in helping the king of Leango, whose subject himself was; and that the Angolans durst not be seen out of their bounds on that side the kingdom; for there was a much larger village of Congovians in our way, who would certainly rise and destroy them if they came in any numbers amongst them; and though (the war being carried on near the sea) the borders were quiet, yet, upon the least stir, the whole country would be in arms, whilst we might retire through the woods very safely.

Well, we marched on as fast as we could all the remainder of that day, till moonlight, close by the skirt of a long wood, that we might take shelter therein if there should be occasion, and my eyes were the best part of the way behind me; but neither hearing or seeing any thing to annoy us, and finding by the declivity of the ground we should soon be in some plain or bottom, and have a chance of water for us all, and pasture for our muletto, who was now become one of us, we would not halt till we found a bottom to the hill, which in half an hour more we came to, and in some minutes after to a rivulet of fine clear water, where we resolved to spend the night. Here we fastned our muletto by his cord to a stake in the ground; but perceiving him not to have sufficient range to fill his belly in before morning, we, under Glanlepze's direction, cut several long slips from the mat, and soaking them well in water, twisted them into a very strong cord, of sufficient length for the purpose. And now, having each of us brought a bundle of dry fallen sticks from the wood with us, and gathered two or three flints as we came along, we struck fire on my knife upon some rotten wood, and boiled a good piece of

our goat's flesh; and having made such a meal as we had neither of us made for many months before, we laid us down and slept heartily till morning.

As soon as day broke we packed up our goods, and filling our calabash with water, we loaded our muletto, and got forward very pleasantly that day, and several others following, and had tolerable lodgings.

About noon one day, travelling with great glee, we met an adventure which very much daunted me, and had almost put a stop to my hopes of ever getting where I intended. We came to a great river, whose name I have now forgot, near a league over, but full, and especially about the shores, of large trees which had fallen from the mountains, and been rolled down with the floods, and lodged there in a shocking manner. This river Glanlepze told me we must pass. For my part I shrunk at the sight of it, and told him, if he could go over, I would not desire to prevent his meeting with his family, but as for my share I had rather take my chance in the woods on this side, than plunge myself into such a stream, only for the sake of drowning. O, says Glanlepze, then you cannot swim. No, says I, there is my misfortune. Well, well, says the kind Glanlepze, be of good heart, I'll have you over. He then bad me go cut an armful of the tallest of the reeds that grew there near the shore, whilst he pulled up another where he then was, and bring them to him. The side of the river sloped for a good way with an easy descent, so that it was very shallow where the reeds grew, and they stood very close together, upon a large compass of ground. I had no sooner entered the reeds a few yards to cut some of the longest, but (being about knee deep in the water and mud, and every step raising my feet very high, to keep them clear of the

roots which were mated together) I thought I had trod upon a trunk of one of the trees, of which, as I ſaid, there was ſuch plenty thereabouts; and raiſing my other foot to get that alſo upon the tree, as I fancied it, I found it move along with me, upon which I roared out, when Glanlepze, who was not far from me, imagining what was the matter, cried out, leap off, and run to ſhore to the right. I knew not yet what was the caſe, but did as I was bid, and gained the ſhore. Looking back, I perceived the reeds ſhake and ruſtle all the way to the ſhore, by degrees, after me. I was terribly frightened, and ran to Glanlepze, who then told me the danger I had eſcaped, and that what I took for a tree was certainly a large alligator, or crocodile.

My blood ran chill within me at hearing the name of ſuch a dangerous creature; but he had no ſooner told me what it was than out came the moſt hideous monſter I had ever ſeen. Glanlepze ran to ſecure the muletto; and then, taking the cord which had faſtned him, and tying it to each end of a broken arm of a tree that lay on the ſhore, he marched up to the crocodile without the leaſt diſmay, and beginning near the tail, with one leg on one ſide, and the other on the other ſide, he ſtraddled over him, ſtill mending his pace as the beaſt crept forward, till he came to his forefeet; then throwing the great log before his mouth, he by the cord in his hand bobbed it againſt the creature's noſe, till he gaped wide enough to have taken in the muletto; then of a ſudden jerking the wood between his jaws with all his force by the cord, he gagged the beaſt, with his jaws wide open up to his throat, ſo that he could neither make uſe of his teeth, nor ſhut his mouth; he then threw one end of the cord upon the ground, juſt before the creature's under jaw, which, as

he by degrees crept along over it, came out behind his fore legs on the contrary ſide; and ſerving the other end in the ſame manner, he took up thoſe ends and tied them over the creature's back, juſt within his fore legs, which kept the gag firm in his mouth; and then calling out to me, for I ſtood at a good diſtance, Peter, ſays he, bring me your knife; I trembled at going ſo near, for the crocodile was turning his head this way, and that very uneaſy, and wanting to get to the river again, but yet I carried it, keeping as much behind him as I could, ſtill eyeing him which way he moved, and at length toſſed my knife ſo near that Glanlepze could reach it; and he, juſt keeping behind the beaſt's fore feet, and leaning forward, firſt darted the knife into one eye, and then into the other, and immediately leaping from his back, came running to me. So Peter, ſays he, I have done the buſineſs. Ay! buſineſs enough I think, ſays I, and more than I would have done to have been king of Congo. Why Peter, ſays he, there is nothing but a man may compaſs by reſolution, if he takes both ends of a thing in his view at once, and fairly deliberates on both ſides what may be given and taken from end to end. What you have ſeen me perform is only from a thorough notion I have of this beaſt, and of myſelf, how far each of us hath power to act and counteract upon the other, and duly applying the means. But, ſays he, this talk will not carry us croſs the river; come, here are the reeds I have pulled up, which I believe will be ſufficient without any more, for I would not overload the muletto. Why, ſays I, is the muletto to carry them? No, they are to carry you, ſays he. I can never ride upon theſe, ſays I. Huſh, ſays he, I will not loſe you, never fear. Come, cut me a good tough ſtick, the length of theſe reeds. Well, ſays I, this is all conjuration; but I do not ſee a ſtep towards my getting over the river yet,

unleſs I am to ride the muletto upon theſe reeds, and guide myſelf with the ſtick. I muſt own Peter, ſays he, you have a bright gueſs. So taking an armful of the reeds, and laying them on the ground, now Peter, ſays he, lay that ſtick upon thoſe reeds, and tie them tight at both ends. I did ſo. Now Peter, ſays he, lay yourſelf down upon them. I then laying myſelf on my back lengthwiſe upon the reeds, Glanlepze laughed heartily at me, and turning me about, brought my breaſt upon the reeds at the heighth of my armpits; and then taking a handful of the reeds he had reſerved by themſelves, he laid them on my back, tying them to the bundle cloſe at my ſhoulders, and again at the ends. Now Peter, ſays he, ſtand up, which I did, but it was full as much as I could do. I then ſeeing Glanlepze laughing at the figure I cut, deſired him to be ſerious, and not put me upon loſing my life for a joke; for I could not think what he would do next with me. He bid me never fear, and looking more ſoberly, ordered me to walk to the river, and ſo ſtand juſt within the bank till he came; then leading the muletto to me, he tied me to her, about a yard from the tail, and taking the cord in his hand, led the muletto and me into the water. We had not gone far before my guide began to ſwim; then the muletto and I were preſently chin deep, and I expected nothing but drowning every moment; however, having gone ſo far, I was aſhamed to cry out; when getting out of my depth, and my reeds coming to their bearing, up I mounted, and was carried on with all the eaſe imaginable, my conductor guiding us between the trees ſo dexterouſly, that not one accident happened to either of us all the way, and we arrived ſafe on the oppoſite ſhore.

We had now got into a very low, cloſe, ſwampy country, and our goat's fleſh began to be very ſtale

through the heat, not only of the ſun, but the muletto's back; however, we pleaſed ourſelves we ſhould have one more meal of it before it was too bad to eat; ſo having travelled about three miles from the river, we took up our lodging on a little riſing, and tied our muletto in a valley about half a furlong below us, where he made as good a meal in his way as we did in ours.

WE had but juſt ſupped, and were ſauntering about to find the eaſieſt ſpot to ſleep on, when we heard a ruſtling and a grumbling noiſe in a ſmall thicket juſt on our right, which ſeeming to approach nearer and nearer, Glanlepze rouſed himſelf, and was on his legs juſt time enough to ſee a lioneſs, and a ſmall whelp which accompanied her, within thirty yards of us, making towards us, as we afterwards gueſſed, for the ſake of the goat's fleſh, which now ſmelt very ſtrong. Glanlepze whipped on the contrary ſide of the fire to that where the goat's fleſh lay, and fell to kicking the fire about at a great rate, which being made of dry wood, cauſed innumerable ſparks to fly about us; but the beaſts ſtill approaching in a couchant manner, and ſeizing the ribs of the goat, and other bones, for we had only cut the fleſh off, and grumbling and cracking them like rotten twigs, Glanlepze ſnatched up a firebrand, flaming, in each hand, and made towards them; which ſight ſo terrified the creatures, that they fled with great precipitation to the thicket again.

GLANLEPZE was a little uneaſy at the thoughts of quitting ſo good a lodging as we had found, but yet held it beſt to move farther; for as the lions had left the bones behind them, we muſt expect another viſit if we ſtayed there, and could hope for no reſt; and above all, we might poſſibly loſe our muletto; ſo we

removed our quarters two miles further, where we ſlept with great tranquillity.

REFLECTIONS on the nature of mankind have often aſtoniſhed me. I told you at firſt my thoughts concerning prayer, in my journey to Briſtol, and of the benefit I received from it, and how fully I was convinced of the neceſſity of it, which one would think was a ſufficient motive to a reaſonable creature to be conſtant in it; and yet it is too true, that notwithſtanding the difficulties I had laboured under, and hardſhips I had undergone, and the danger of ſtarving at ſea, or being murdered for food by my fellows, when there was as urgent a neceſſity of begging divine aſſiſtance as can be conceived, I never once thought of it, or of the object of it, or returned thanks for my being delivered, till the lioneſs had juſt left me; and then I felt near the ſame force urging me to return thanks for my eſcape, as I had impelling me to prayer before; and I think I did ſo with great ſincerity.

I SHALL not trouble you with a relation of the common accidents of our journey, which laſted two months and better, or with the different methods we uſed to get ſubſiſtance, but ſhall at once conduct you to Quamis: Only mention, that we were ſometimes obliged to go about; and were once ſtopped by a cut that my guide and companion received by a ragged ſtone in his foot, which growing very bad, almoſt deprived me of the hopes of his life; but by reſt, and conſtant ſucking and licking it, which was the only remedy we had to apply, except green leaves chewed, that I laid to it by his direction, to ſupple and cool it, he ſoon began to be able to ride upon the muletto, and ſometimes to walk a little.

I SAY, we arrived at Quamis, a ſmall place on a river of that name, where Glanlepze had a neat dwelling, and left a wife and five children when he went out to the wars. We were very near the town when the day cloſed, and, as it is ſoon dark there after ſunſet, you could but juſt ſee your hand at our entrance into it. We met nobody in the way, but I went directly to Glandlepze's door, by his direction, and ſtruck two or three ſtrokes hard againſt it with my ſtick. On this there came a woman to it ſtark naked. I aſked her in her own language if ſhe knew one Glanlepze? She told me, with a deep ſigh, that once ſhe did. I aſked then where he was? She ſaid with their anceſtors, ſhe hoped, for he was the greateſt warrior in the world; but if he was not dead, he was in ſlavery. Now, you muſt know, Glandlepze had a mind to hear how his wife took his death or ſlavery, and had put me upon aſking theſe queſtions before he diſcovered himſelf. I proceeded then to tell her I brought ſome news of Glanlepze, and was lately come from him, and by his order. And does my dear Glanlepze live, ſays ſhe, flying upon my neck, and almoſt ſmothering me with careſſes, till I begged her to forbear, or ſhe would ſtrangle me, and I had a great deal more to tell her; then ringing for a light, when ſhe ſaw I was a white man, ſhe ſeemed in the utmoſt confuſion at her own naked neſs, and immediately retiring, ſhe threw a cloth round her waiſt, and came to me again. I then repeated to her that her huſband was alive and well, but wanted a ranſom to redeem himſelf, and had ſent me to ſee what ſhe could any ways raiſe for that purpoſe. She told me ſhe and her children had lived very hardly ever ſince he went from her, and ſhe had nothing to ſell, or make money of, but her five children; that as this was the time for the ſlaving trade, ſhe would ſee what ſhe could raiſe by them, and if that would not do,

ſhe would ſell herſelf and ſend him the money, if he would let her know how to do it.

GLANLEPZE, who heard every word that paſſed, finding ſo ſtrong a proof of his wife's affection, could hold out no longer, but burſting into the room, claſped her in his arms, crying, no, Zulika, for that was her name, I am free; there will be no occaſion for your or my dear children's ſlavery; and rather than have purchaſed my freedom at that rate, I would willingly have died a ſlave myſelf. But my own ears have heard the tender ſentiments my Zulika has for me. Then, drowned in tears of joy, they embraced each other ſo cloſe, and ſo long, that I thought it impertinent to be ſeen with them till their firſt tranſports were over; ſo I retired without the houſe, till Glanlepze called me in, which was not leſs than full half an hour. I admired at the love and conſtancy of the perſons I had juſt left behind me; and, good heaven, thinks I to myſelf, with a ſigh, how happy has this our eſcape rendered Glanlepze and his wife! what a mutual felicity do they feel! And what is the cauſe of all this? Is it that he has brought home great treaſures from the wars? Nothing like it, he is come naked. Is it that having eſcaped ſlavery and poverty he is returned to an opulent wife, abounding with the good things of life? No ſuch thing. What then can be the cauſe of this exceſs of ſatisfaction, this alternate joy, that Patty and I could not have been as happy with each other? Why, it was my pride that interpoſed and prevented it. But what am I like to get by it, and by all this travel, and theſe hazards? Is this the way to make a fortune, to get an eſtate? No ſurely, the very contrary. I could not forſooth labour for Patty and her children where I was known, but am I any better for labouring here where I am not known, where I have nobody to aſſiſt me, than I could

have been where I am known, and where there would have been my friends about me, at leaſt, if they could have afforded no great aſſiſtance. I have been deceived then, and have travelled ſo many thouſand miles, and undergone ſo many dangers, only to know at laſt I had been happier at home; and have doubled my miſery for want of conſideration, that very conſideration, which, impartially taken, would have convinced me I ought to have made the beſt of my bad circumſtances, and to have laid hold of every commendable method of improving them. Did I come hither to avoid daily labour or voluntary ſervitude at home? I have had it in abundance. Did I come hither to avoid poverty and contempt? Here I have met with them ten fold. And now, after all, was I to return home empty and naked, as Glanlepze has done, ſhould I meet a wife as bare as myſelf ſo ready to die in my embraces, and to be a ſlave herſelf, with her children, for my ſake only? I fear not.

THESE and the like reflections had taken poſſeſſion of me, when Glanlepze called me in, where I found his wife, in her manner, preparing our ſupper, with all that cheerfulneſs which gives a true luſtre to innocence.

THE buſtle we made had by this time awakened the children, who, ſtark naked as they were born, both boys and girls, came crawling out, and black as jett, from behind a curtain at the further end of the room, which was very long. The father as yet had only enquired after them, but upon ſight of them he fell into an extaſy, kiſſing one, ſtroaking another, dandling a third, for the eldeſt was ſcarce fourteen; but not one of them knew him, for ſeven years makes a great chaſm in young memories. The more I ſaw of this

ſport, the ſtronger impreſſions Patty and my own children made upon me. My mind had been ſo much employed on my own diſtreſſes, that thoſe dear ideas were almoſt effaced; but this moving ſcene introduced them afreſh, and imprinted them deeply on my imagination, which cheriſhed the ſweet remembrance.

CHAP. VIII.

How the author paſſed his time with Glanlepze; his acquaintance with ſome Engliſh priſoners; they project an eſcape; he joins them; they ſeize a Portugueſe ſhip; and get off; make a long run from land; want water; they anchor at a deſart iſland; the boat goes aſhore for water; they loſe their anchor in a ſtorm; the author and one Adams drove to ſea; a miraculous paſſage to a rock; Adam's drowned there; the author's miſerable condition.

I PASSED my time with Glanlepze and his wife, who both really loved me, with ſufficient bodily quiet, for about two years; my buſineſs was chiefly, in company with my patron, to cultivate a ſpot of ground wherein we had planted grain and neceſſaries for the family; and once or twice a-week we went a-fiſhing, and ſometimes hunted and ſhot veniſon. Theſe were our chief employments; for as to excurſions for ſlaves, which is a practice in many of thoſe countries, and what the natives get money by, ſince our own ſlavery, Glanlepze and I could not endure it.

THOUGH I was tolerably eaſy in my external circumſtances, yet my mind hankering after England made

my life ſtill unhappy; and that infelicity daily encreaſed, as I ſaw the leſs probability of attaining my deſire. At length hearing of ſome European ſailors who were under confinement for contraband trade at a Portugueſe fort, about two leagues from Quamis, I reſolved to go to ſee them, and if any of them ſhould be Engliſh, at leaſt to enquire after my native country. I went, and found two Dutchmen, who had been ſailors in Britiſh pay ſeveral years, three Scotchmen, an Iriſhman, and five Engliſhmen; but all had been long in Engliſh merchants ſervice. They were taken, as they told me, by a Portugueſe veſſel, together with their ſhip, as a Dutch prize, under pretence of contraband trade. The captain was known to be a Dutchman, though he ſpoke good Engliſh, and was then in Engliſh pay, and his veſſel Engliſh: Therefore they would have it that he was a Dutch trader, and ſo ſeized his ſhip in the harbour, with the priſoners in it. The captain, who was on ſhore with ſeveral of his men, was threatned to be laid in irons if he was taken, which obliged him and his men to abſcond, and fly over land to an Engliſh factory for aſſiſtance to recover his ſhip and cargo; being afraid to appear and claim it amongſt ſo many enemies, without an additional force. They had been in confinement two months, and their ſhip confiſcated and ſold. In this miſerable condition I left them, but returned once or twice a-week, for a fortnight or three weeks, to viſit them. Theſe inſtances of regard, as they thought them, created ſome confidence in me, ſo that they converſed with me very freely. Amongſt other diſcourſe, they told me one day that one of their crew, who went with the captain, had been taken ill on the way, and being unable to proceed, was returned; but as he talked good Portugueſe he was not ſuſpected to belong to them; and that he had been to viſit them, and would be there a-

gain that day. I had a mind to ſee him, ſo ſtayed longer than I intended, and in about an hour's time he came. After he was ſeated, he aſked who I was; and, privately, if I might be truſted. Being ſatisfied I might, for that I was a Corniſh man, he began as follows, looking narrowly about to ſee he was not overheard: My lads, ſays he, be of good courage, I have hopes for you; be but men, and we ſhall ſee better days yet. I wondered to what this preface tended, when he told us, That ſince his return from the captain, as he ſpoke good Portugueſe, and had ſailed on board Portugueſe traders ſeveral years, he mixed among that people, and particularly the crew of the Del Cruz, the ſhip which had taken them; that that ſhip had partly unloaded, and was taking in other goods for a future voyage; that he had informed himſelf of their ſtrength, and that very ſeldom more than three men and two boys lay on board; that he had hired himſelf to the captain, and was to go on board the very next day. Now, ſays he, my lads, if you can break priſon any night after to-morrow, and come directly to the ſhip, (telling them how ſhe lay, for, ſays he, you cannot miſtake, you will find two or three boats moored in the gut againſt the church) I will be ready to receive you, and we will get off with her, in lieu of our ſhip they have taken from us; for there is nothing ready to follow us.

The priſoners liſtned to this diſcourſe very attentively, but ſcratched their heads, fearing the difficulty of it, and ſeverer uſage if they miſcarried, and made ſeveral objections; but at laſt they all ſwore to attempt it the night but one following, upon which the ſailor went away, to prepare for their reception on board. After he was gone I ſurveyed his ſcheme attentively in my own mind, and found it not ſo difficult as I firſt i

magined, if the priſoners could but eſcape cleverly. So before I went away I told them I approved of their purpoſe, and as I was their countryman, I was reſolved, with their leaves, to riſk my fortune with them. At this they ſeemed much pleaſed, and all embraced me. We then fixed the peremptory night, and I was to wait at the water ſide, and get the boats in readineſs.

The priſon they were in was a Portugueſe fort, which had been deſerted ever ſince the building a much better on the other ſide of the river, a gunſhot lower. It was built with walls too thick for naked men to ſtorm; the captives were ſecurely locked up every night, and two ſoldiers, or centinels, kept watch in an outer room, who were relieved from the main guard in the body of the building.

THE expected night arrived, and a little before midnight, as had been concerted, one of the priſoners cried out, he was ſo parched up, he was on fire, he was on fire. The centinels were both aſleep, but the firſt that waked called at the door to know what was the matter; the priſoner ſtill crying out I am on fire, the reſt begged the centinel to bring a bowl of water for him, for they knew not what ailed him.

THE good natured fellow, without waking his companion, brought the water, and having a lamp in the guard-room, opened the door, when the priſoners ſeizing his arms, and commanding him to ſilence, bound his hands behind him, and his feet together; then ſerving the other in the ſame manner, who was now juſt awake, and taking from them their ſwords and muſquets, they made the beſt of their way over the fort wall, which, being built with buttreſſes on the inſide,

was eaſily ſurmounted. Being got out, they were not long a finding me, who had before this time made the boats ready, and was impatiently waiting for them; ſo in we all got, and made good ſpeed to the ſhip, where we were welcomed by our companion ready to receive us.

UNDER pretence of being a new entered ſailor, he had carried ſome Madeira wine on board, and treated the men and boys ſo freely, that he had thrown them into a dead ſleep, which was a wiſe precaution. There being now therefore no fear of diſturbance nor interruption, we drew up the boats, and ſet all hands at work to put the ſhip under way, and plied it ſo cloſely, the wind favouring us, that by eleven o'clock the next morning we were out of ſight of land; but we ſet the men and boys adrift in one of the boats nigh the mouth of the river.

THE firſt thing we did, after we had made a long run from ſhore, was to conſult what courſe to ſteer. Now as there was a valuable loading on board of goods from Portugal, and others taken in ſince, ſome gave their opinion for ſailing directly to India, ſelling the ſhip and cargo there, and returning by ſome Engliſh veſſel. But that was rejected; for we did not doubt but notice would be given of our eſcape along the coaſt; and if we ſhould fall into the Portugueſe hands, we could expect no mercy; beſides, we had not people ſufficient for ſuch an enterpriſe. Others again were for ſailing the directeſt courſe for England. But I told them, as our opinions were different, and no time was to be loſt, my advice was, to ſtretch ſouthward till we might be quite out of fear of purſuit, and then, whatever courſe we took, by keeping clear of all coaſts we might hope to come ſafe off.

My propoſal ſeemed to pleaſe the whole crew; ſo crowding all the ſail we could, we puſhed ſouthward very briſkly before the wind for ſeveral days. We now went upon examining our ſtores, and found we had flour enough, plenty of fiſh, and ſalt proviſions, but were ſcant of water and wood; of the firſt whereof there was not half a ton, and but very little of the latter. This made us very uneaſy; and being none of us expert in navigation, farther than the common working of the ſhip, and having no chart on board that might direct us to the neareſt land, we were almoſt at our wit's end, and came to a ſhort allowance of liquor. That we muſt get water if we could was indiſputable, but where to do it puzzled us; as we had determined not to get in with the African ſhore on any account whatever.

In this perplexity, and under the guidance of different opinions, for we were all captains now, we ſometimes ſteered eaſtward, and ſometimes weſtward, for about nine days; when we eſpied a little bluiſh cloud-like appearance to the S. W. This continuing, we hoped it might be land, and therefore made to it. Upon our nearer approach we found it to be as we judged, an iſland; but not knowing its name, or whether it was inhabited, we coaſted round it two days, to ſatisfy ourſelves as to this laſt particular. Seeing no living creature on it during that time, and the ſhore being very broken, we came to an anchor about two miles from it, and ſent ten of our crew in our beſt boat, with ſome caſks, to get water and cut wood. The boat returned at night with ſix men and the caſks filled, having left four behind to go on with the cutting of wood againſt next day. Accordingly next morning the boat went off again, and made two turns with water and wood before night; which was repeated for two or

three days after. On the ſixth ſhe went off for wood only, leaving none but me and one John Adams aboard.

THE boat had ſcarce reached the iſland this laſt turn before the day overcaſt, and there aroſe ſuch a ſtorm of wind, thunder, lightning, and hail, as I had never before ſeen. At laſt our cable broke cloſe to the anchor, and away we went with the wind, full ſouthward by weſt; and not having ſtrength to keep the ſhip upon a ſide wind, we were forced to ſet her head right before it, and let her drive. Our hope was every hour the ſtorm would abate, but it continued with equal violence for many days, during all which time neither Adams or I had any reſt; for one or other of us was forced, and ſometimes both, to keep her right before the wind, or ſhe would certainly have overſet. When the ſtorm abated, as it did by degrees, neither Adams or I could tell where we were, or even in what part of the world.

I was ſorry I had no better a ſailor with me, for neither Adams or myſelf had ever made more than one voyage till now, ſo that we were both unacquainted with the latitude, and ſcarce knew the uſe of the compaſs to any purpoſe; and being out of all hope of ever reaching the iſland to our companions, we neither knew which way to ſteer, or what to do. And indeed had we known where we were, we two only could not have been able to navigate the ſhip to any part we deſired; or ever get to the iſland, unleſs ſuch a wind as we had before would of itſelf have driven us thither.

WHILST we were conſidering day after day what to do, though the ſea was now very calm and ſmooth, the ſhip ſeemed to ſail at as great a rate as before, which we attributed to the velocity ſhe had acquired by

the ſtorm, or to currents that had ſet that way by the violence of the winds. Contenting ourſelves with this, we expected all ſoon to be right again; and as we had no proſpect of ever ſeeing our companions, we kept the beſt look out we could, to ſee for any veſſel coming that courſe which might take us in, and reſolved to reſt all our hopes upon that.

WHEN we had ſailed a good while after this manner, we knew not whether, Adams called out, I ſee land. My heart leaped within me for joy, and we hoped the current that ſeemed to carry us ſo faſt ſet in for ſome iſlands or rivers that lay before us. But ſtill we were exceedingly puzzled at the ſhip's making ſuch way; and the nearer and nearer we approached the land, which was now very viſible, the more ſpeed the ſhip made, though there was no wind ſtirring. We had but juſt time to think on this unexpected phænomenon, when we found, that what we had taken for land was a rock of an extraordinary height, to which, as we advanced nearer, the ſhip encreaſed its motion, and all our ſtrength could not make her anſwer her rudder any other way. This put us under the apprehenſion of being daſhed to pieces immediately; and in leſs than half an hour I verily thought my fears had not been groundleſs. Poor Adams told me he would try when the ſhip ſtruck if he could leap upon the rock, and ran to the head for that purpoſe; but I was ſo fearful of ſeeing my danger, that I ran under hatches, reſolving to ſink in the ſhip. We had no ſooner parted, but I felt ſo violent a ſhock, that I verily thought the ſhip had brought down the whole rock upon her, and been thereby daſhed to pieces, ſo that I never more expected to ſee the light.

I LAY under this terror for at leaſt half an hour,

waiting the ſhip's either filling with water or bulging every moment. But finding neither motion in her, or any water riſe, or the leaſt noiſe whatſoever, I ventured with an aching heart from my retreat, and ſtole up the hatchway as if an enemy had been on deck, peeping firſt one way then another. Here nothing preſented but confuſion; the rock hung over the hatchway, at about twenty feet above my head, our foremaſt lay by the board, the mainmaſt yardarm was down, and great part of the mainmaſt ſnapped off with it, and almoſt every thing upon deck was diſplaced. This ſight ſhocked me extremely; and calling for Adams, in whom I hoped to find ſome comfort, I was too ſoon convinced I had loſt him.

CHAP. IX.

Wilkins thinks of deſtroying himſelf; his ſoliloquy; ſtrange accident in the hold; his ſurpriſe; cannot climb the rock; his method to ſweeten his water; lives many months on board; ventures to ſea in his boat ſeveral times, and takes many fiſh; is almoſt overcome by an eel.

AFTER I had ſtood a while in the utmoſt confuſion of thought, and my ſpirits began to be a little compoſed, I was reſolved to ſee what damage the hull of the ſhip had received. Accordingly I looked narrowly, but could find none, only ſhe was immoveably fixed in a cleft of the rock, like a large arch-way, and there ſtuck ſo faſt, that though upon ſathoming I could find no bottom, ſhe never moved in the leaſt by the working of the water.

I NOW began to look upon Adams as a happy man, being delivered by immediate death from ſuch an inextricable ſcene of diſtreſs, and wiſhed myſelf with him a thouſand times. I had a great mind to have followed him into the other world; yet, I know not how it is, there is ſomething ſo abhorrent to human nature in ſelf-murder, be one's condition what it will, that I was ſoon determined on the contrary ſide. Now again I perceived that the Almighty had given me a large field to expatiate in upon the trial of his creatures, by bringing them into imminent dangers ready to overwhelm them, and at the ſame time, as it were, hanging out the flag of truce and mercy to them. Theſe thoughts brought me to my knees, and I poured out my ſoul to God, in a ſtrain of humiliation, reſignation to his will, and earneſt petitions for deliverance, or ſupport in this diſtreſs. Having finiſhed, I found myſelf in a more compoſed frame; ſo having eaten a biſcuit, and drank a can of water, and not ſeeing any thing to be done whereby I could better my condition, I ſat me down upon the deck, and fell into the following ſoliloquy.

PETER, ſays I, what have you to do here? Alas, reply'd I to myſelf, I am fixed againſt my will in this diſmal manſion, deſtined, as rats might be, to devour the proviſions only, and, having eat all up, to periſh with hunger for want of a ſupply. Then, ſays I, of what uſe are you in the world, Peter? Truly, anſwered I, of no other uſe that I can ſee, but to be an object of miſery for divine vengeance to work upon, and to ſhew what a deplorable ſtate human nature can be reduced to: For I cannot think any one elſe can be ſo wretched. And again, Peter, ſays I, what have you been doing ever ſince you came into the world? I am afraid, ſays I, I can anſwer no better to this queſtion than to either of the former; for if only reaſonable ac-

tions are to be reckoned among my doings, I am ſure I have done little worth recording. For, let me ſee what it all amounts to? I ſpent my firſt ſixteen years in making a fool of my mother; my three next in letting her make a fool of me; and in being fool enough myſelf to get me a wife and two children before I was twenty. The next year was ſpent in finding out the miſery of ſlavery from experience. Two years more I repined at the happineſs of my benefactor, and at finding it was not my lot to enjoy the ſame. This year is not yet ſpent, and how many more are to come, and where they may be paſſed, and what they may produce, requires a better head than mine even to gueſs at; but certainly my preſent ſituation ſeems to promiſe nothing beſide woe and miſery. But hold a little, ſays I, and let me clearly ſtate my own wretchedneſs. I am here, it is true, but for any good I have ever done, or any advantage I have reaped in other places, I am as well here as any where. I have no preſent want of food, or unjuſt or cruel enemy to annoy me; ſo as long as the ſhip continues entire, and proviſions laſt, I ſhall do tolerably. Then why ſhould I grieve or terrify myſelf about what may come? What my frighted imagination ſuggeſts may perhaps never happen; deliverance, though not to be looked for, is yet poſſible; and my future fate may be as different from my preſent condition, as this is from the hopes with which I lately flattered myſelf. And why, after all, may I not die a natural death here as well as any where? All mankind do die, and then there is an end of all.——An end of all, did I ſay,—no, there is ſomething within that gives me the lie when I ſay ſo. Let me ſee,——death, my maſter uſed to ſay, is not an end, but a beginning of real life. And may it not be ſo?—May I not as well undergo a change from this to a different ſtate of life, when I leave this world, as be

born into it, I know not from whence? Who ſent me into this world? Who framed me of two natures ſo unlike, that death cannot deſtroy but one of them? It muſt be the almighty God: But all God's works tend to ſome end; and if he has given me an immortal nature, it muſt be his intention that I ſhould live ſomewhere and ſomehow for ever. May not this ſtage of being then be only an introduction to, a preparative for another? There is nothing in this ſuppoſition repugnant to reaſon. Upon the whole, if God is the author of my being, he only has a right to diſpoſe of it; and I may not put an end thereto without his leave. It is no leſs true, that my continuing therein during his pleaſure, and becauſe it is ſo, may turn vaſtly to my advantage in his good time; it may be the means of my becoming happy for ever, when it is his will that I go hence. It is no leſs probable, that, diſmal as my preſent circumſtances appear, I may be even now the object of a kind providence. God may be leading me by affliction to repentance of former crimes; deſtroying thoſe ſenſual affections that have all my days kept me from loving and ſerving him. I will therefore ſubmit myſelf to his will, and hope for his mercy.

THESE thoughts, and many others I then had, compoſed me very much, and by degrees reconciled me to my deſtined ſolitude. I walked my ſhip, of which I was now both maſter and owner, and employed myſelf in ſearching how it was faſtened to the rock, and where it reſted, but all to no purpoſe, as to that particular. I then ſtruck a light, and went into the hold to ſee what I could find uſeful; for we had never ſearched the ſhip ſince we took her.

IN the hold I found abundance of long iron bars, which I ſuppoſe were brought out to be trafficked with

the blacks. I obſerved they lay all with one end cloſe to the head of the ſhip, which I preſumed was occaſioned by the violent ſhock they received when ſhe ſtruck againſt the rock; but ſeeing one ſhort bar lying out beyond the reſt, though touching at the end one of the long bars, I thought to take it up, and lay it on the heap with the others; but the moment I had raiſed the end next the other bars, it flew out of my hand with ſuch violence againſt the head of the ſhip, and with ſuch a noiſe, as greatly ſurpriſed me, and put me in fear it had broke through the plank.

I JUST ſtayed to ſee no harm was done, and ran upon deck with my hair ſtiff on my head; nor could I conceive leſs than that ſome ſubtil ſpirit had done this prank merely to terrify me.

IT ran in my pate ſeveral days, and I durſt upon no account have gone into the hold again, though my whole ſupport had lain there; nay, it even ſpoiled my reſt, for fear ſomething tragical ſhould befal me, of which this amazing incident was an omen.

ABOUT a week after, as I was ſhifting myſelf, for I had not taken my cloaths off ſince I came there, and putting on a new pair of ſhoes which I found on board, my own being very bad, taking out my iron buckles, I laid one of them upon a broken piece of the maſt that I ſat upon, when, to my aſtoniſhment, it was no ſooner out of my hand, but up it flew to the rock, and ſtuck there. I could not tell what to make of it; but was ſorry the devil had got above deck. I then held ſeveral other things, one after another, in my hand, and laid them down where I laid the buckle, but nothing ſtirred, till I took out the fellow of that from the

ſhoes; when letting it go, away it jumped alſo to the rock.

I MUSED on theſe phænomena for ſome time, and could not forbear calling upon God to protect me from the devil, who muſt, as I imagined, have a hand in ſuch unaccountable things as they then ſeemed to me. But at length reaſon got the better of theſe fooliſh apprehenſions, and I began to think there might be ſome natural cauſe of them, and next to be very deſirous of finding it out. In order to this I ſet about making experiments, to try what would run to the rock, and what would not. I went into the captain's cabbin, and opening a cupboard, of which the key was in the door, I took out a pipe, a bottle, a pocket-book, a ſilver ſpoon, a tea cup, *&c.* and laid them ſucceſſively near the rock, when none of them anſwered; but the key which I had brought out of the cupboard on my finger dropping off while I was thus employed, no ſooner it was diſengaged, but away it went to it. After that I tried ſeveral other pieces of iron ware with the like ſucceſs. Upon this, and the needle of my compaſs ſtanding ſtiff to the rock, I concluded that this ſame rock contained great quantity of loadſtone, or was itſelf one vaſt magnet, and that our lading of iron was the cauſe of the ſhip's violent courſe thereto, which I mentioned before.

THIS quite ſatisfied me as to my notion of ſpirits, and gave me a more undiſturbed night's reſt than I had had before; ſo that now, having nothing to affright me, I paſſed the time tolerably well in my ſolitude, as it grew by degrees familiar to me.

I HAD often wiſhed it had been poſſible for me to climb the rock; but it was ſo ſmooth in many places,

and craggy in others, and overhanging, continuing juſt the ſame to the right and left of me as far as ever I could ſee, that from the impoſſibility of it I diſcharged all thoughts of ſuch an attempt.

I HAD now lived on board three months, and perceived the days grow ſhorter and ſhorter, 'till, having loſt the ſun for a little time, they were quite dark: That is, there was no abſolute daylight, or indeed viſible diſtinction between day and night; though it was never ſo dark but I could ſee well enough upon deck to go about.

WHAT now concerned me the moſt was my water, which began to grow very bad (though I had plenty of it) and unſavoury, ſo that I could ſcarce drink it, but had no proſpect of better. Now and then indeed it ſhowed a little, which I made ſome uſe of; but this was far from contenting me. Hereupon I began to contrive, and having nothing elſe to do, I ſet two open veſſels upon deck, and drawing water from the hold, I filled one of my veſſels, and letting it ſtand a day and a night, I poured it into the other, and ſo ſhifted it every twenty-four hours; this, I found, though it did not bring it to the primitive taſte, and render it altogether palatable, was nevertheleſs a great help to it, by incorporating the freſh air with it, ſo that it became very potable: And this method I conſtantly uſed with my drinking water, ſo long as I ſtayed on board the ſhip.

IT had now been ſharp weather for ſome time, and the cold ſtill increaſing, this put me upon rumaging the ſhip further than ever I thought to do before; when opening a little cabbin under deck, I found a large cargo of fine French brandy, a great many bottles, and

ſome ſmall caſks of Madeira wine, with divers cordial waters. Having taſted theſe, and taken out a bottle or two of brandy, and ſome Madeira, I locked up my door, and looked no farther that time.

THE next day I enquired into my proviſions; and ſome of my fleſh having ſoaked out the pickle, I made freſh pickle, and cloſed it up again. I that day alſo found ſeveral cheeſes caſed up in lead, one of which I then opened and dined upon; but what time of day or night it was when I eat this meal I could not tell. I found a great many cheſts well filled, and one or two of tools, which ſome years after ſtood me in a very good ſtead, though I did not expect they would ever be of that ſervice when I firſt met with them.

IN this manner I ſpent my time till I began to ſee broad daylight again, which cheared me greatly. I had been often put in hopes, during the dark ſeaſon, that ſhips were coming towards me, and that I ſhould once more have the converſation of mankind; for I had, by the ſmall glimmering, ſeen many large bodies, to my thinking, move at a little diſtance from me, and particularly toward the re-appearing of the light; but tho' I hallowed as loud as I could, and often fired my gun, I never received an anſwer.

WHEN the light returned my days increaſed in proportion as they had before decreaſed; and gathering comfort from that, I determined to launch my ſmall boat, and to coaſt along the iſland, as I judged it, to ſee if it was inhabited, and by whom: I determined alſo to make me ſome lines for fiſhing, and carry my gun, to try for other game, if I found a place for landing: For though I had never ſince my arrival ſeen a ſingle living creature but my cat, except inſects, of which there

were many in the water, and in the air, before the dark weather, and then began to appear again; yet I could not but think there were both birds and beasts to be met with.

UPON launching my boat I perceived she was very leaky, so I let her fill, and continue thus a week or more, to stop her cracks; then getting down the side of my ship, I scooped her quite dry, and found her very fit for use; so putting on board my gun, lines, brandy bottle, and a cloaths chest for a seat, with some little water, and provisions for a week, I once more committed myself to the sea, having taken all the observation I could to gain my ship again, if any accident should happen; though I resolved, upon no account, to quit sight of the rock willingly.

I HAD not rowed very long before I thought I saw an island to my right, about a league distant, to which I inclined to steer my course, the sea being very calm; but upon surveying it nearer, I found it only a great cake of ice, about forty yards high above the water, and a mile or two in length. I then concluded, that what I had before taken for ships were only these lumps of ice. Being thus disappointed as to my island, I made what haste I could back to the rock again, and coasted part of its circumference; but though I had gone two or three leagues of its circuit, the prospect it afforded was just the same.

I THEN tried my lines, by fastning several very long ones, made of the log line, to the side of the boat, baiting them with several different baits, but took only one fish of about four pounds weight, very much resembling a haddock, part of which I dressed for my supper, after my return to the ship, and it proved very good.

Towards evening I returned to my home, as I may call it.

THE next day I made a voyage on the other ſide of the rock, though but to a ſmall diſtance from the ſhip, with intent only to fiſh, but took nothing. I had then a mind to victual my boat, or little cruizer, and prepare myſelf for a voyage of two or three days; which I thought I might ſafely undertake, as I had never ſeen a troubled ſea ſince I came to the iſland; for though I heard the wind often roaring over my head, yet it coming always from the land-ſide, it never diſturbed the water near ſhore. I ſet out the ſame way I went at firſt, deſigning to ſail two or three days out, and as many home again; and reſolved, if poſſible, to fathom the depth as I went. With this view I prepared a very long line, with a large ſhot tied in a rag at the end of it by way of plummet; but I felt no ground until the ſecond night. The next morning I came into thirty fathom water, then twenty, then ſixteen. In both tours I could perceive no abatement in the height or ſteepneſs of the rock.

IN about fourteen fathom water I dropped my lines, and lay by for an hour or two. Feeling ſeveral jars as I ſat on my cheſt in the boat, I was ſure I had caught ſomewhat; ſo pulling up my lines ſucceſſively, I brought firſt a large eel, near ſix feet long, and almoſt as thick as my thigh, whoſe mouth, throat, and fins were of a fine ſcarlet, and the belly as white as ſnow: He was ſo ſtrong while in the water, and weighty, I had much ado to get him into the boat, and then had a harder jobb to kill him; for though (having a hatchet with me to cut wood, in caſe I met with any landing-place) I chopped off his head the moment I had him on board, yet he had ſeveral times after that liked to have broke

my legs, and beat me overboard, before I had quite taken his life from him; and had I not whip'd off his tail, and alſo divided his body into two or three pieces, I could not have maſtered him. The next I pulled up was a thick fiſh like a tench, but of another colour and much bigger. I drew up ſeveral others, flat and long fiſh, till I was tired with the ſport, and then I ſet out for the ſhip again, which I reached the third day.

DURING this whole time I had but one ſhot, and that was as I came homewards, at a creature I ſaw upon a high crag of the rock, which I fired at with ball, fearing that my ſmall ſhot would not reach it. The animal being mortally wounded, bounded up, and came tumbling down the rock very near me. I picked it up, and found it to be a creature not much unlike our rabbits, but with ſhorter ears, a longer tail, and hoofed like a kid, though it had the perfect ſtuck of a rabbit. I put it into my boat, to contemplate on when I arrived at the ſhip, and plying my oars, got ſafe, as I ſaid, on the third day.

I MADE me a fire to cook with as ſoon as I had got my cargo out of the boat into my ſhip, but was under debate which of my dainties to begin upon. I had ſometimes a mind to have broiled my rabbit, as I called it, and boiled ſome of my fiſh, but, being tired, I hung up my fleſh till the next day, and boiled two or three ſorts of my fiſh, to try which was beſt. I knew not the nature of moſt of them, ſo I boiled a piece of my eel to be ſure, judging that, however I might like the others, I ſhould certainly be able to make a good meal of that. This variety being ready, I took a little of my oil out of the hold for ſauce, and ſat down to my meal as ſatisfied as an emperor. But upon taſting my ſeveral meſſes, though the eel was rather richer than

the ſmaller fiſhes, yet the others were all ſo good, I gave them the preference for that time, and laid by the reſt of the eel, and of the other fiſh, till the next day, when I ſalted them for future ſpending.

I KEPT now a whole week or more at home, to look further into the contents of the ſhip, bottle off a cask of Madeira which I found leaking, and to conſume my new ſtores of fiſh and fleſh, which being ſomewhat ſtale when firſt ſalted, I thought would not keep ſo well as the old ones that were on board. I added alſo ſome freſh bread to my proviſion, and ſweetned more water, by the aforementioned method; and when my neceſſary domeſtic affairs were brought under, I then projected a new voyage.

CHAP. X.

Lays in great ſtore of proviſion; reſolves to traverſe the rock; ſails for three weeks, ſtill ſeeing it only; is ſucked under the rock, and hurried down a cataract; continues there five weeks; his deſcription of the cavern, his thoughts and difficulties; his arrival at a great lake; and his landing in the beautiful country of Graundevolet.

I HAD for a long time wanted to ſee the other ſide of the rock, and at laſt reſolved to try if I could not coaſt it quite round; for, as I reaſoned with myſelf, I might poſſibly find ſome landing-place, and perhaps a convenient habitation on ſhore. But as I was very uncertain what time that might take up, I determined on having proviſions, inſtruments of divers kinds, and ne-

ceſſary utenſils in plenty, to guard againſt accidents as well as I could. I therefore took another ſea cheſt out of the hold of the ſhip, and letting it into my boat, repleniſhed it with a ſtock of wine, brandy, oil, bread, and the like, ſufficient for a conſiderable voyage. I alſo filled a large caſk with water, and took a good quantity of ſalt, to cure what fiſh I ſhould take by the way. I carried two guns, two brace of piſtols, and other arms, with ammunition proportionable; alſo an ax or two, a ſaw to cut wood if I ſhould ſee any, and a few other tools, which might be highly ſerviceable if I could land. To all theſe I added an old ſail, to make a covering for my goods and artillery againſt the weather. Thus furniſhed and equipped, having ſecured my hatches on board, and every thing that might ſpoil by wet, I ſet out (with a God's ſpeed) on my expedition; committing myſelf once more to providence and the main ocean, and proceeding the ſame way I went the firſt time.

I DID not ſail extraordinary faſt, but frequently fiſhed in proper places, and caught a great deal; ſalting and drying the beſt of what I took. For three weeks time and more I ſaw no entrance into the iſland, as I call it, nor any thing but the ſame unſcaleable rock. This uniform proſpect gave me ſo little hopes of landing, that I was almoſt of a mind to have returned again. But, on mature deliberation, reſolving to go forward a day or two more, I had not proceeded twenty-four hours, when, juſt as it was becoming dark, I heard a great noiſe, as of a fall of water, whereupon I purpoſed to ly by and wait for day to ſee what it was; but the ſtream inſenſibly drawing me on, I ſoon found myſelf in an eddy, and the boat drawing forward, beyond all my power to reſiſt it, I was quickly ſucked under a low arch, where, if I had not fallen flat in my

boat, having barely light enough to see my danger, I had undoubtedly been crushed to pieces, or driven overboard. I could perceive the boat to fall with incredible violence, as I thought, down a precipice, and suddenly whirled round and round with me, the water roaring on all sides, and dashing against the rock with a most amazing noise.

I EXPECTED every moment my poor little vessel would be staved against the rock, and I overwhelmed with waters, and for that reason never once attempted to rise up, or look upon my peril, till after the commotion had in some measure ceased. At length, finding the perturbation of the water abate, and as if by degrees I came into a smoother stream, I took courage just to lift up my affrighted head; but guess if you can the horror which seized me, on finding myself in the blackest of darkness, unable to perceive the smallest glimmer of light.

HOWEVER, as my boat seemed to glide easily, I roused myself, and struck a light; but if I had my terrors before, what must I have now; I was quite stupified, at the tremendous view of an immense arch over my head, to which I could see no bounds; the stream itself, as I judged, was about thirty yards broad, but in some places wider, in some narrower. It was well for me I happened to have a tinder-box, or, tho' I had escaped hitherto, I must have at last perished; for in the narrower parts of the stream, where it ran swiftest, there were frequently such craggs stood out from the rock, by reason of the turnings and windings, and such sets of the current against them, as, could I not have seen to manage my boat, which I took great care to keep in the middle of the stream, must have thrown me on them to my inevitable destruction.

HAPPY it was for me alſo I was ſo well victualled, and that I had taken with me two bottles of oil (as I ſuppoſed, for I did not imagine I had any more) or I had certainly been loſt; not only through hunger (for I was, to my gueſs, five weeks in the vault or cavern) but for want of light, which the oil furniſhed, and without which all other conveniences could have been of no avail to me. I was forced to keep my lamp always burning; ſo not knowing how long my reſidence was to be in that place, or when I ſhould get my diſcharge from it, if ever, I was obliged to huſband my oil with the utmoſt frugality; and notwithſtanding all my caution it grew low, and was juſt ſpent, in little above half the time I ſtayed there.

I HAD now cut a piece of my ſhirt for a wick to my laſt drop of oil, which I twiſted and light. I burnt the oil in my braſs tobacco-box, which I had fitted pretty well to anſwer the purpoſe. Sitting down, I had many black thoughts of what muſt follow the loſs of my light, which I conſidered as near expiring, and that, I feared, for ever. I am here, thought I, like a poor condemned criminal, who knows his execution is fixed for ſuch a day, nay ſuch an hour, and dies over and over in imagination, and by the torture of his mind, till that hour comes: That hour which he ſo much dreads! and yet that very hour which releaſes him from all further dread. Thus do I;—my laſt wick is kindled, my laſt drop of fuel is conſuming, and I am every moment apprehending the ſhocks of the rock, the ſuffocation of the water, and, in ſhort, thinking over my dying thoughts, till the ſnuff of my lamp throws up its laſt curling expiring flame, and then my *quietus* will be preſently ſigned, and I releaſed from my tormenting anxiety. Happy minute, come then, I only wait for thee.

My ſpirits grew ſo low and feeble upon this, that I had recourſe to my brandy bottle to raiſe them; but as I was juſt going to take a ſip, I reflected that would only encreaſe thirſt, and therefore it were better to take a little of my white Madeira: So putting my dram-bottle again into the cheſt, I held up one of Madeira, as I fancied, to the lamp, and ſeeing it was white, for I had red too, I clapped it eagerly to my mouth, when the firſt gulp gave me a greater refreſhment, and more cheered my heart, than all the other liquors I had put together could have done, inſomuch, as I had almoſt leaped over the boat's ſide for joy: It is oil, cried I aloud, it is oil. I ſet it down carefully, with inexpreſſible pleaſure, and examining the reſt of the bottles I had taken for white Madeira, I found two more of thoſe to be filled with oil. Now, ſays I, here is the counterpart of my condemned priſoner; for let but a pardon come, though at the gallows, how ſoon does he forget he has been an unhappy villain. And I too have ſcarce a notion now how a man in my caſe could feel ſuch ſorrow as I have for want of a little oil.

AFTER my firſt tranſport I found myſelf grow ſerious, reflecting upon the vigilance of providence over us poor creatures, and the various inſtances wherein it interpoſes to ſave or relieve us, in caſes of the deepeſt diſtreſs, where our own foreſight, wiſdom, and power have utterly failed, and when, looking all around, we could diſcover no means of deliverance. And I ſaw a train of circumſtances leading to the incident I have juſt mentioned, which obliged me to acknowledge the ſuperintendance of heaven over even my affairs. And as the goodneſs of God had cared for me thus far, and manifeſted itſelf to me now, in reſcuing me, as it were, from being ſwallowed up in darkneſs, I had ground to hope he intended a compleat deliverance of me out of

that dismal abyss, and would cause me yet to praise him in the full brightness of day.

A SERIES of these meditations brought me, at the end of five weeks, as nearly as I could compute it by my lamp, to a prodigious lake of water, bordered with a gradly down, about half a mile wide, of the finest verdure I had ever seen; this again was flanked with a wood or grove, rising like an amphitheatre, of about the same breadth; and behind, and above all, appeared the naked rock, to an immense height.

CHAP. XI.

His joy on his arrival at land; a description of the place; no inhabitants; wants fresh water; resides in a grotto; finds water; views the country; carries his things to the grotto.

IT is impossible to express my joy at the sight of day once more. I got on the land as soon as possible after my dismission from the cavern, and kneeling on the ground, returned hearty thanks to God for my deliverance, begging at the same time grace to improve his mercies, and that I might continue under his protection whatever should hereafter befal me, and at last die on my native soil.

I unloaded my vessel as well as I could, and hauled her up on the shore, and turning her upside down, made her a covering for my arms and baggage; I then sat down to contemplate the place, and eat a most de-

lightful meal on the graſs, being quite a new thing to me.

I WALKED over the green ſwarth to the wood with my gun in my hand, a brace of piſtols in my girdle, and my cutlaſs hanging before me. But, when I was juſt entering the wood, looking behind me, and all around the plain, is it poſſible, ſays I, that ſo much art, for I did not then believe it was natural, could have been beſtowed upon this place, and no inhabitant in it? Here are neither buildings, huts, caſtle, or any living creature to be ſeen; it cannot be, ſays I, that this place was made for nothing.

I THEN went a conſiderable way into the wood, and inclined to have gone much further, it being very beautiful, but, on ſecond thoughts, judged it beſt to content myſelf at preſent with only looking out a ſafe retreat for that night; for however agreeable the place then ſeemed, darkneſs was at hand, when every thing about me would have more or leſs of horror in it.

THE wood, at its firſt entrance, was compoſed of the moſt charming flowering ſhrubs, that can be imagined, each growing upon its own ſtem, at ſo convenient a diſtance from the other, that you might fairly paſs between them any way without the leaſt incommodity. Behind them grew numberleſs trees ſomewhat taller, of the greateſt variety of ſhapes, forms, and verdures the eye ever beheld; each alſo ſo far aſunder as was neceſſary for the ſpreading of their ſeveral branches, and the growth of their delicious fruits, without a bruſh, briar, or ſhrub amongſt them. Behind theſe, and ſtill on the higher ground, grew an infinite number of very large tall trees, much loftier than the former, but intermixed with ſome underwood, which

grew thicker and closer the nearer you approached the rock. I made a shift to force my way through these as far as the rock; which rose as perpendicular as a regular building, having only here and there some crags and unevennesses. There was, I observed, a space all the way between the underwood and the rock, wide enough to drive a cart in; and indeed I thought it had been left for that purpose.

I WALKED along this passage a good way, having tied a rag of the lining of my jacket at the place of my entrance to know it again at my coming back, which I intended to be before it grew dark; but I found so much pleasure in the walk, and surveying a small natural grotto which was in the rock, that the day-light forsook me unawares; whereupon I resolved to put off my return unto the boat till next morning, and to take up my lodging for that night in the cave.

I CUT down a large bundle of underwood with my cutlass, sufficient to stop up the mouth of the grotto, and laying me down to rest, slept as sound as if I had been on board my ship; for I never had one hour's rest together since I shot the gulph till this. Nature indeed could not have supported itself thus long under much labour; but as I had nothing to do but only keep the middle stream, I began to be as used to guide myself in it with my eyes almost closed, and my senses retired, as a higler is to drive the cart to market in his sleep.

THE next morning I awaked sweetly refreshed, and, by the sign of my rag, found the way again through the underwood to my boat. I raised that up a little, took out some bread and cheese, and having eat pretty heartily, laid me down to drink at the lake, which

looked as clear as cryſtal, expecting a moſt delicious draught; but I had forgot it brought me from the ſea, and my firſt gulp almoſt poiſoned me. This was a ſore diſappointment, for I knew my water caſk was nigh emptied; and indeed, turning up my boat again, I drew out all what remained, and drank it, for I was much athirſt.

HOWEVER, I did not deſpair; I was now ſo uſed to God's providence, and had a ſenſe of its operations ſo rivetted in my mind, that though the vaſt lake of ſalt water was ſurrounded by an impenetrable rock, or barrier of ſtone, I reſted ſatisfied that I ſhould rather find even that yield me a freſh and living ſtream, than I ſhould periſh for want of it.

WITH this eaſy mind did I travel five or ſix miles on the ſide of the lake, and ſometimes ſtepped into the wood and walked a little there, till I had gone almoſt half the diameter of the lake, which lay in a circular, or rather an oval figure. I had then thoughts of walking back, to be near my boat and lodging, for fear I ſhould be again benighted if I went much further: But, conſidering I had come paſt no water, and that poſſibly I might yet find ſome if I went quite round the lake, I rather choſe to take up with a new lodging that night than to return: And I did not want for a ſupper, having brought out with me more bread and cheeſe than had ſerved for dinner, the remainder of which was in the lining of my jacket. When it grew darkiſh, I had ſome thoughts of eating; but I conſidered, as I was then neither very hungry nor dry, if I ſhould eat it would but occaſion drought, and I had nothing to allay that with; ſo I contented myſelf for that night to lay me down ſupperleſs.

In the morning I ſet forward again upon my water ſearch, and hoped to compaſs the whole lake that day. I had gone about ſeven miles more, when, at a little diſtance before me, I perceived a ſmall hollow or cut in the graſs from the wood to the lake; thither I haſted with all ſpeed, and bleſſed God for the ſupply of a fine freſh rill, which, diſtilling from ſeveral ſmall clefts in the rock, had collected itſelf into one ſtream, and cut its way through the green ſod to the lake.

I LAY down with infinite pleaſure, and ſwallowed a moſt chearing draught of the precious liquid; and ſitting on the brink, made a good meal of what I had with me, and then drank again. I had now got five ſixth's of the lake's circumference to go back again to my boat, for I did not ſuſpect any paſſage over the cavern's mouth where I came into the lake; and I could not without much trouble conſider, that if I would have this water for a conſtant ſupply, I muſt either come a long way for it, or fix my habitation near it. I was juſt going back again, revolving theſe uneaſy thoughts in my breaſt, when this roſe ſuddenly in my mind, that if I could poſſibly get over the mouth of the cavern, I ſhould not have above three miles from my grotto to the water: Now as I could not get home that night otherwiſe than by croſſing it, and as, if I loſt my labour, I ſhould be but where I was; whereas if I ſhould get over, it would very much ſhorten my journey; I reſolved to try whether the thing was practicable; firſt, however, looking out for a reſting place ſomewhere near my water, if I ſhould meet with a diſappointment.

I THEN walked into the wood, where meeting with no place of retreat to my liking, I went to my rill, and taking another ſup, determined not to leave that ſide

of the lake till morning; but having ſome time to ſpare, I walked about two miles to view the inlet of the lake, and was agreeably ſurprized, juſt over the mouth of the cavern, to ſee a large ſtone arch like a bridge, as if it had been cut out of the rock, quite acroſs the opening; this cheered me vaſtly, and paſſing over it, I found a path that brought me to my boat before night.

I THEN went up to my grotto for the third night in this moſt delightful place, and the next morning early I launched my boat, and taking my water caſk, and a ſmall dipping bucket with me, I rowed away for the rill, and returned highly pleaſed with a ſufficiency of water, whereof I carried a bucket and a copper kettle full up with me to the grotto. Indeed it was not the leaſt part of my ſatisfaction that I had this kettle with me; for though I was in hopes in my laſt voyage I ſhould have come to ſome ſhore where I could have landed and enjoyed myſelf over ſome of my fiſh, and for that reaſon had taken it, notwithſtanding things did not turn out juſt as I had ſchemed, yet my kettle proved the moſt uſeful piece of furniture I had.

HAVING now acquainted myſelf with the circumference of the lake, and ſettled a communication with my rill, I began to think of commencing houſekeeper. In order thereunto I ſet about removing my goods up to the grotto. By conſtant application, in a few days I had gotten all thither but my two great cheſts and my water caſk, and how to drag or drive any of thoſe to it I was entirely at a loſs. My water caſk was of the utmoſt importance to me, and I had thoughts ſometimes of ſtopping it cloſe, and rolling it to the place, but the aſcent through the wood to the grotto was ſo ſteep, that, beſides the fear of ſtaving it, which would

have been an irreparable loſs, I judged it impoſſible to accompliſh it by my ſtrength; ſo, with a good deal of diſcontent, I determined to remit both that and the cheſts to future conſideration.

CHAP. XII.

An account of the grotto; a room added to it; a view of that building; the author makes a little cart, alſo a wet dock for his boat; goes in queſt of proviſion; a deſcription of divers fruits and plants; he brings home a cart-load of different ſorts; makes experiments on them; loads his cart with others; a great diſappointment; makes good bread; never ſees the ſun; the nature of the light.

HAVING come to a full reſolution of fixing my reſidence at the grotto, and making that my capital ſeat, it is proper to give you ſome deſcription of it.

THIS grotto then was a full mile from the lake, in the rock which encompaſſed the wood. The entrance was ſcarcely two feet wide, and about nine feet high, riſing from the height of ſeven feet upward to a point in the middle. The cavity was about fifteen feet long within, and about five wide. Being obliged to ly lengthwiſe in it, full ſix feet of it were taken up at the further end for my lodging only, as nothing could ſtand on the ſide of my bed that would leave me room to come at it. The remaining nine feet of the cave's length were taken up, firſt by my fire place, which was on the deepeſt ſide of the door-way, ranging with my bed, which I had ſet cloſe to the rock on one ſide,

and took up near three feet in length; and my furniture and provisions of one sort or other so filled up the rest, that I had much ado to creep between them into my bed.

In the chest which I had taken for a seat in the boat as aforesaid, upon breaking it open by the water-side, I found a mattrass, some shirts, shoes, stockings, and several other useful things, a small case of bottles with cordials in them, some instruments of surgery, plaisters and salves; all which, together with a large quantity of fish that I had salted, I carried to the grotto.

My habitation being thus already overcharged, and as I could not however bear the thoughts of quitting it, or of having any of my goods exposed to the weather on the outside, I was naturally bent on contriving how I should encrease my accommodations. As I had no prospect of enlarging the grotto itself, I could conceive no other way of effecting my desire but by the addition of an outer room. This thought pleased me very much, so that the next day I set myself to plan out the building, and trace the foundation of it.

I told you before there was about the space of a cart-way between the wood and the rock clear; but this breadth, as I was building for life (so I imagined) not appearing to me spacious enough for my new apartment, I considered how I should extend its bounds into the wood. Hereupon I set myself to observe what trees stood at a proper distance from my grotto, that might serve as they stood, with a little management of hewing and the like, to compose a noble door-way, posts and supporters; and I found, that upon cutting down three of the nearest trees I should answer my purpose in this respect; and that there were several others

about twenty feet from the grotto, and running parallel with the rock, the ſituation of which was ſo happily adapted to my intention, that I could make them become, as I fancied, an out-fence or a wall; ſo I took my ax to cut down my neareſt trees, but as I was going to ſtrike, a ſomewhat different ſcheme preſented to my imagination that altered my reſolution.

In conformity with this new plan, I fixed the height of my intended ceiling, and ſawed off my neareſt trees ſo that, ſloping from the ſides to the middle, to ſupport croſs beams for the roof to reſt on, and left the trunks ſtanding by way of pillars, both for the uſe and ornament of the ſtructure. In ſhort, I worked hard every day upon my building for a month, in which time I had cut all my timber into proper lengths for my outworks and covering, but was at a great ſtand how to fix my ſide poſts, having no ſpade or mattock, and the ground almoſt as hard as flint; for to be ſure it had never been ſtirred ſince the creation. I then thought I had the worſt part of my job to get over; however, I went on, and having contrived, in moſt of my upright ſide quarters, to take the tops of trees, and leave on the lower parts of the cleft, where they began to branch out and divide from the main ſtem, I ſet one of them upright againſt the rock, then laid one end of my long ceiling pieces upon the cleft of it, and laid the other end upon a tree on the ſame ſide, whoſe top I had alſo ſawed off with a proper cleft; I then went and did the ſame on the other ſide; after this I laid on a proper number of croſs beams, and tied all very firmly together with the bark of young trees, ſtripped off in long thongs, which anſwered that purpoſe very well. Thus I proceeded, croſſing, joining, and faſtening all together, till the whole roof was ſo ſtrong and firm, that there was no ſtirring any part of it. I then ſpread

it over with ſmall lopwood, on which I raiſed a ridge of dried graſs and weeds very thick, and thatched over the whole with the leaves of a tree very much reſembling thoſe of a palm, but much thicker, and not quite ſo broad. The entire ſurface, I might ſay, was as ſmooth as a dye, and ſo ordered, by a gentle declivity every way, as to carry off the wet.

HAVING covered in my building, I was next to finiſh and cloſe the walls of it; the ſkeleton of theſe was compoſed of ſticks, croſſing one another checker-wiſe, and tied together: To fill up the voids, I wove upon them the longeſt and moſt pliable twigs of the underwood I could find, leaving only a door-way on one ſide, between two ſtems of a tree, which, dividing in the trunk, at about two feet from the ground, grew from thence, for the reſt of its height, as if the branches were a couple of trees a little diſtant from one another, which made a ſort of ſtile-way to my room. When this was all done, I tempered up ſome earth by the lake ſide, and mixing it to a due conſiſtence with mud which I took from the lake, applied it as a plaiſtering in this manner: I divided it into pieces, which I rolled up of the ſize of a foot-ball; theſe lumps I ſtuck cloſe by one another on the lattice, preſſing them very hard with my hands, which forced part of them quite through the ſmall twigs, and then I ſmoothed both ſides with the back of my ſaw to about the thickneſs of five or ſix inches, ſo that by this means I had a wall round my new apartment a foot thick. This plaiſter-work coſt me ſome time and a great deal of labour, as I had a full mile to go to the lake for every load of ſtuff, and could carry but little at once, it was ſo heavy; but there was neither water for tempering, or proper earth to make it with any nearer. At laſt, however, I compleated my building in every reſpect but a door,

and for this I was forced to uſe the lid of my ſea cheſt, which indeed I would have choſen not to apply that way, but I had nothing elſe that would do; and there was however this conveniency, that it had hinges ready fixed thereon.

I now began to enjoy myſelf in my new habitation, like the abſolute and ſole lord of the country; for I had neither ſeen man nor beaſt ſince my arrival, ſave a few animals in the trees like our ſquirrels, and ſome water rats about the lake; but there were ſeveral ſtrange kinds of birds I had never before ſeen, both on the lake and in the woods.

That which now troubled me moſt was, how to get my water nearer to me than the lake, for I had no leſſer veſſel than the caſk which held above twenty gallons, and to bring that up was a fatigue intolerable. My next contrivance therefore was this: I told you I had taken my cheſt lid to make a door for my anti-chamber, as I now began to call it; ſo I reſolved to apply the body of the cheſt alſo to a purpoſe different from that it originally anſwered. In order to this I went to the lake where the body of the cheſt lay, and ſawed it thorough, within about three inches of the bottom; of the two ends, having rounded them as well as I could, I made two wheels, and with one of the ſides I made two more; I burnt a hole through the middle of each, then preparing two axel-trees, I faſtened them, after ſetting on the wheels, to the bottom of the cheſt, with the nails I had drawn out of it. Having finiſhed this machine, on which I beſtowed no ſmall labour, I was hugely pleaſed with it, and only wiſhed I had a beaſt, if it were but an aſs, to draw it; however, that taſk I was ſatisfied to perform myſelf, ſince there was no help for it; ſo I made a good ſtrong

cord out of my fishing lines, and fixed that to drag it by. When all was thus in readiness, filling my water-cask, I bound it thereon, and so brought it to the grotto, with such ease, comparatively, as quite charmed me. Having succeeded so well in the first essay, I no sooner unloaded, but down went I again with my cart, or truckle rather, to the lake, and brought from thence on it my other chest, which I had left entire.

I had now nothing remaining near the lake but my boat, and had half a mind to try to bring that up too; but having so frequent occasion for her to get my water in, which I used in greater abundance now than I had done at first, a great part going to supply my domestic uses, as well as for drinking, I resolved against that, and sought out for a convenient dock to stow it in, as a preservative against wind and weather, which I soon after effected; for having pitched upon a swampy place, overgrown with a sort of long flags or reeds, I soon cut a trench from the lake, with a sort of spade or board I had chopped and sharpened for that use.

THUS having stowed my boat, and looked over all my goods, and sorted them, and taken a survey of my provisions, I found I must soon be in want of the last, if I did not forthwith procure a supply; for though I had victualled so well at setting out, and had been very sparing ever since, yet, had it not been for a great quantity of fish I took and salted in my passage to the gulph, I had been to seek for food much sooner. Hereupon I thought it highly prudent to look out before I really wanted.

WITH this resolution I accoutred myself as in my first walk, with my instruments and arms. But instead

of travelling the lake ſide, I went along the wood, and therein found great plenty of divers kinds of fruits, though I could ſcarce perſuade myſelf to taſte or try the effects of them, being ſo much unlike our own, or any I had ſeen elſewhere. I obſerved amongſt the ſhrubs abundance of a fruit, or whatever elſe you may call it, which grew like a ram's horn, ſharp at the point next the twig it was faſtened to, and circling round and round, one fold upon another, which gradually encreaſed to the ſize of my wriſt in the middle, and then as gradually decreaſed, till it terminated in a point again at the contrary extreme; all which ſpiral, if it were fairly extended in length, might be a yard or an ell long. I ſurveyed this ſtrange vegetable very attentively; it had a rind or cruſt which I could not break with my hand; but taking my knife, and making an opening therewith in the ſhell, there iſſued out a ſort of milky liquor in great quantity, to at leaſt a pint and a half, which, having taſted, I found as ſweet as honey, and very pleaſant. However, I could not perſuade myſelf any more than juſt to taſte it. I then found on the large trees ſeveral kinds of fruits like pears or quinces, but moſt of them exceeding hard and rough, and quite diſagreeable; ſo I quitted my hopes of them.

About three miles from my grotto I met with a large ſpace of ground full of a low plant, growing only with a ſingle woody ſtalk half a foot high, and from thence iſſued a round head, about a foot or ten inches diameter, but quite flat; about three quarters of an inch thick, and juſt like a cream cheeſe, ſtanding upon its edge. Theſe grew ſo cloſe together, that, upon the leaſt wind ſtirring, their heads rattled againſt each other very muſically; for though the ſtalks were ſo very ſtrong, that they would not eaſily either bend or break, yet the fanning of the wind upon the broad

heads twiſting the ſtalks ſo as to let the heads ſtrike each other, they made a moſt agreeable ſound.

I STOOD ſome time admiring this ſhrub, and then cutting up one of them, I found it weighed about two pounds; they had a tough green rind or covering, very ſmooth, and the inſide full of a ſtringy pulp, quite white. In ſhort, I made divers other trials of berries, roots, herbs, and what elſe I could find, but received little ſatisfaction from any of them, for fear of bad qualities. I returned back ruminating on what things I had ſeen, reſolving to take my cart the next walk, and bring it home loaded with different kinds of them, in order to make my trials thereof at leizure. But my cart being too flat, and wanting ſides, I conſidered it would carry very little, and that what it would otherwiſe bear, on that account, muſt tumble and roll off; ſo I made a fire and turned ſmith: For with great ado, breaking off the wards of a large key I had, and making it red hot, I by degrees faſhioned it into a kind of ſpindle, and therewith making holes quite round the bottom of my cart, in them I ſtuck up ſticks about two feet high, that I had tapered at the end to fit them.

HAVING thus qualified my cart for a load, I proceeded with it to the wood, and cutting a ſmall quantity of each ſpecies of green, berry, fruit, and flower that I could find, and packing them ſeverally in parcels, I returned at night heavy laden, and held a counſel with myſelf what uſe they could moſt properly be applied to.

I HAD amongſt my goods, as I ſaid, a copper kettle, which held about a gallon; this I ſet over my fire, and boiled ſomething by turns of every ſort in it, watching all the while, and with a ſtick ſtirring and raiſing up one thing and then another, to feel when they were

boiled tender; but of upwards of twenty greens which I thus dreſſed, only one proved eatable, all the reſt becoming more ſtringy, tough, and inſipid for the cooking. The one I have excepted was a round, thick, wooly leafed plant, which boiled tender, and taſted as well as ſpinage; I therefore preſerved ſome leaves of this to know it again by, and, for diſtinction, called it by the name of that herb.

I THEN began upon my fruits of the pear and quince kind, at leaſt eight different ſorts, but I found I could make nothing of them, for they were moſt of them as rough and crabbed after ſtewing as before, ſo I laid them all aſide. Laſtly, I boiled my ram's horn and cream cheeſe, as I called them, together. Upon taſting the latter of theſe, it was become ſo watery and inſipid I laid it aſide as uſeleſs. I then cut the other, and taſted the juice, which proved ſo exceedingly pleaſant, that I took a large gulp or two of it and toſſed it into the kettle again.

HAVING now gone through the ſeveral kinds of my exotics, I had a mind to re-examine them after cooling; but could make nothing of any of my greens but the ſpinage. I tried ſeveral berries and nuts too, but, ſave a few ſorts of nuts, they were all very taſteleſs. Then I began to review the fruits, and could find but two ſorts that I had any the leaſt hopes from. I then laid the beſt by, and threw the others away. After this proceſs, which took me up near a whole day, and clearing my houſe of good-for-nothings, I returned to re-examine my cheeſe that was grown cold, and was now ſo dry and hard I could not get my teeth into it; upon which I was going to ſkim it away out of my grotto, ſaying, go thou worthleſs (for I always ſpoke aloud my thoughts to myſelf) I ſay, I was juſt diſpatching it,

when I checked my hand, and, as I could make no impreſſion with my teeth, had a mind to try what my knife could do. Accordingly I began at the edge of the quarter, for I had boiled but a quarter of it; but the rind was grown ſo hard and brittle, that my knife ſlipping, and raking along the cut edge of it, ſcratched off ſome powder as white as poſſible; I then ſcraped it backward and forward ſome time, till I found it would all ſcrape away in this powder except the rind; upon which I laid it aſide again for further experiment.

DURING this review my kettle and ram's horn had been boiling, till hearing it blubber very loud, and ſeeing there was but little liquor in it, I whipped it off the fire for fear of burning its bottom, but took no further notice of it till about two hours after, when returning to the grotto, I went to waſh out my kettle, but could ſcarce get my ram's horn from the bottom; and when I did, it brought up with it a ſort of pitchy ſubſtance, though not ſo black, and ſeveral gummy threads hanging to it, drawn out to a great length. I wondered at this, and thought the ſhell of the ram's horn had melted, or ſome ſuch thing, until venturing to put a little of the ſtuff on my tongue, it proved, to my thinking, as good treackle as I had ever taſted.

THIS new diſcovery pleaſed me very much. I ſcraped all the ſweet thing up, and laid it near my grotto, in a large leaf of one of the trees, about two feet long, and broad in proportion, to prevent its running about. In getting this curioſity out of my kettle, I found in it a ſmall piece of my cheeſe, which I ſuppoſe had been broke off in ſtirring; and biting it, for it was ſoft enough, I think it was the moſt luſcious and delicate morſel I ever put into my lips. This unexpected good fortune put me on trying the beſt of my pears again;

ſo ſetting on my kettle with very little water, and putting ſome of my treacle into it, and two of the beſt pears quartered, I found, upon a little boiling, they alſo became an excellent dainty.

HAVING ſucceeded ſo well, I was quite ripe for another journey with my cart, which I accordingly undertook, taking my rout over the ſtone bridge to ſee what the other ſide of the lake produced. In travelling through the trees, I met, amongſt other things, with abundance of large gourds, which, climbing the trees, diſplayed their fruit to the height of twenty or thirty feet above the ground. I cut a great many of theſe, ſome very large ones, of different hues and forms, which of themſelves making a great load, with ſome few new ſorts of berries and greens, was the gathering of that day. But I muſt tell you I was almoſt foiled in getting them home; for coming to my ſtone bridge, it roſe ſo ſteep, and was ſo much ruggeder than the graſs or wood-ground, that I was at a ſet upon the firſt entrance, and terribly afraid I ſhould either break my wheels, or pull off my axel-trees. Hereupon I was forced to unload, and carry my cargo over in my arms to the other ſide of the bridge; whether having then, with leſs fear but much caution, drawn my cart, I loaded again and got ſafe home.

I WAS mightily pleaſed with the acquiſitions of this journey, for now, thinks I, I ſhall have ſeveral convenient family utenſils; ſo ſpent the next day or two in ſcooping my gourds and cleaning away the pulp. When I had done this, finding the rinds to be very weak and yielding, I made a good fire, and ſetting them round it at a moderate diſtance to dry, I went about ſomething elſe without doors. But alas, my hopes were ill founded; for coming home to turn my gourds, and ſee

how dry they were, I found them all warped, and turned into a variety of uncouth ſhapes. This put me to a ſtand; but however, I recovered ſome pieces of them for uſe, as the bottom parts of moſt of them, after paring away the ſides, would hold ſomething, tho' they by no means anſwered my firſt purpoſe.

WELL, thinks I, what if I have loſt my gourds, I have gained experience; I will dry them next time with the guts in, and having ſtiffened their rinds in their proper dimenſions, then try to cleanſe them. So next morning, for I was very eager at it, I ſet out with my cart for another load; and having handed them over the bridge, got ſafe with them to the grotto. Theſe by proper management proved exceedingly valuable to me, anſwering, in one way or other, the ſeveral uſes of plates, bottles, pans, and divers other veſſels.

I NOW got a large quantity of the vegetable ram's-horn, and filled a great many of my gourds with the treacle it yielded; I alſo boiled and dried a large parcel of my cheeſes, and hung them up for uſe; for I had now for ſome time made all my bread of the latter, ſcraping and bruiſing the flower, and mixing it with my treacle and water; and this indeed made ſuch a ſweet and nouriſhing bread, that I could even have lived wholly upon it: But I afterwards very much improved it, by putting the milky juice of the ram's-horn, imboiled, to my flower, in a ſmall quantity, and then baking it on the hearth, covered over with embers: This detracted nothing from the ſweetneſs and mellowneſs of my bread, but made it much lighter than the treacle alone would have done.

FINDING there was no fear of ſtarving, but ſo far

from it, that from day to day I found out something new to add to my repasts, either in substantials, or by way of desert, I set me down very well contented with my condition. I had nothing to do but to lay up stores against sickness and the dark weather, which last I expected would soon be upon me, as the days were now exceeding short. Indeed though I had now been here six months, I had never seen the sun since I first entered the gulph; and though there was very little rain, and but few clouds, yet the brightest daylight never exceeded that of half an hour after sunset in the summer time in England, and little more than just redned the sky. For the first part of my time here there was but little if any difference between day and night; but afterwards, what I might call the night, or lesser degree of light, took up more hours than the greater, and went on gradually encreasing as to time, so that I perceived total darkness approached, such as I had on board my ship the year before.

CHAP. XIII.

The author lays in a store against the dark weather; hears voices; his thoughts thereon; persuades himself it was a dream; hears them again; determines to see if any one lodged in the rock; is satisfied there is nobody; observations on what he saw; finds a strong weed like whipcord; makes a drag net, lengthens it; catches a monster; its description; makes oil of it.

I HAD now well stored my grotto with all sorts of winter provisions; and feeling the weather grow very cold, I expected, and waited patiently for the to-

tal darkneſs. I went little abroad, and employed myſelf within doors, endeavouring to fence againſt the approaching extremity of the cold. For this purpoſe I prepared a quantity of ruſhes, which being very dry, I ſpread them ſmoothly on the floor of my bed-chamber a good thickneſs; and over them I laid my matraſs. Then I made a double ſheet of the boat's awning, or ſail, that I had brought to cover my goods; and having ſcewered together ſeveral of the jackets and cloaths I found in the cheſt, of them I made a coverlid; ſo that I lay very commodiouſly, and made very long nights of it, now the dark ſeaſon was ſet in.

As I lay awake one night or day, I know not whether, I very plainly heard the ſound of ſeveral human voices, and ſometimes very loud; but though I could eaſily diſtinguiſh the articulations, I could not underſtand the leaſt word that was ſaid; nor did the voices ſeem at all to me like ſuch as I had any way heard before, but much ſofter, and more muſical. This ſtartled me, and I roſe immediately, ſlipping on my cloaths, and taking my gun in my hand, which I always kept charged, being my conſtant travelling companion, and my cutlaſs. Thus equipped, I walked into my anti-chamber, where I heard the voices much plainer, till, after ſome little time, they by degrees died quite away. After watching here and hearkening a good while, hearing nothing, I walked back into the grotto, and laid me down again on my bed. I was inclined to open the door of my anti-chamber, but I own I was afraid; beſide, I conſidered, that if I did, I could diſcover nothing at any diſtance, by reaſon of the thick and gloomy wood that incloſed me.

I HAD a thouſand different ſurmiſes about the meaning of this incident, and could not conceive how any

human creature ſhould be in my kingdom, as I called it, but myſelf, and I never yet ſee them, or any trace of their habitation. But then again I reflected, that though I had ſurrounded the whole lake, yet I had not traced the out-bounds of the wood next the rock, where there might be innumerable grotto's like mine; nay, perhaps ſome as ſpacious as that I had ſailed through to the lake; and that though I had not perceived it yet, this beautiful ſpot might be very well peopled. But ſays I again, if there be any ſuch beings as I am fancying here, ſurely they do not ſkulk in their dens like ſavage beaſts by daylight, and only patrole for prey by night; if ſo, I ſhall probably become a delicious morſel for them e're long, if they meet with me. This kept me ſtill more within doors than before, and I hardly ever ſtirred out but for water or firing. At length hearing no more voices, or ſeeing any one, I began to be more compoſed in my mind, and at laſt grew perſuaded it was all a mere deluſion, and only a fancy of mine without any real foundation; and ſometimes, though I was ſure I was fully awake when I heard them, I perſuaded myſelf I had roſe in my ſleep upon a dream of voices, and recollected with myſelf the various ſtories I had heard when a boy, of walking in one's ſleep, and the ſurpriſing effects of it; ſo the whole notion was now blown over.

I had not enjoyed my tranquillity above a week, before my fears were rouſed afreſh, hearing the ſame ſound of voices twice the ſame night, but not many minutes at a time. What gave me moſt pain was, that they were at ſuch a diſtance (as I judged by the langour of the ſound) that if I had opened my door, I could not have ſeen the utterers through the trees, and I was reſolved not to venture out; but then I determined, if they ſhould come again, any thing near my

grotto, to open the door, see who they were, and stand upon my defence, whatever came of it: For, says I, my entrance is so narrow and high, that more than one cannot come at a time; and I can with ease dispatch twenty of them before they can secure me, if they should be savages; but if they prove sensible humane creatures, it will be a great benefit to me to join myself to their society. Thus had I formed my scheme, but I heard no more of them for a great while; so that at length beginning to grow ashamed of my fears, I became tranquil again.

THE day now returning, and with it my labours, I applied to my usual callings; but my mind run strangely upon viewing the rock quite round, that is, the whole circuit of my dominions: For, thinks I, there may possibly be an outlet through the rock into some other country, from whence the persons I heard may come. As soon therefore as the days grew towards the longest I prepared for my progress Having lived so well at home since my settlement, I did not care to trust only to what I could pick up in the woods for my subsistance during this journey, which would not only take up time in procuring, but perhaps not agree with me; so I resolved to carry a supply with me proportionate to the length of my perambulation. Hereupon considering, that though my walk round the lake was finished in two days, yet as I now intended to go round by the rock, the way would be much longer, and perhaps more troublesome than that was; remembering also my journey with Glanlepze in Africa, and how much I complained of the fruits we carried for our subsistance; these circumstances, I say, laying together, I resolved to load the cart with a variety of food, bread, and fruits especially, and draw that with me.

THUS provided I ſallied forth with great cheerfulneſs, and proceeded in the main eaſily, though in ſome places I was forced to make way with my hatchet, the ground was ſo overrun with underwood. I very narrowly viewed the rock as I went, bottom and ſides, all the way, but could ſee nothing like a paſſage through it, or indeed any more than one opening or inlet, which I entered for about thirty yards; but it was not above three feet wide, and terminated in the ſolid rock.

AFTER ſome days travel, making all the obſervations I could on the ſeveral plants, ſhrubs, and trees which I met with, particularly where any of theſe occurred to me entirely new, finding myſelf a little faintiſh, I had a mind for a ſup of ram's-horn juice; ſo I cut me one, but upon opening it, found therein only a pithy pulp, and no ways fit to taſte. I ſuppoſed by this I was too early for the milk, it being three months later the laſt year when I cut them. Hereon ſeeing one upon another ſhrub, which, by its ruſty colour, I judged might have hung all the winter, I opened that, and found it full of milk; but putting ſome of it into my mouth, it was as ſour as any vinegar I ever taſted in my life. So thinks I, and ſaid ſo too (for, as I told you before, I always ſpoke out) here is ſauce for ſomething when I want it; and this gave me a hint to ſtore myſelf with theſe gourds, to hang by for vinegar the next winter.

BY this time I had come almoſt to my rill, when I entered upon a large plat of ground miſerably overrun with weeds, matted together very thick. Theſe choaked up my wheels in ſuch a manner, that I could neither free them with my hands, or get either backwards or forwards, they binding my cart down like ſo many cords, ſo that I was obliged to cut my way back again

with my hatchet, and take a ſweep round in the wood on the outſide of theſe weeds.

In all my life I never ſaw any thing of its ſize (for it was not thicker than a whipcord) ſo ſtrong as this weed; and what raiſed my wonder was the length of it, for I drew out pieces of it near fifty foot long; and even they were broken at the end, ſo that it might be as long again for ought I know; for it was ſo matted and twiſted together, that it was a great trial of patience to untangle it; but that which was drieſt, and to me looked the rotteneſt and weakeſt, I found to be much the ſtrongeſt. Upon examination of its parts, I diſcovered it to be compoſed of an infinite number of ſmall threads, ſpirally overlaying and infolding one another.

As I ſaw but few things that I could not find a uſe for, ſo this I perceived would ſerve all the common purpoſes of packthread, a thing I was often in want of. This inclined me to take a load of it home with me. Indeed the difficulty of getting a quantity in the condition I deſired it puzzled me a little; for, ſays I, if I cut up a good deal of it with my hatchet, as I firſt deſigned, I ſhall only have ſmall lengths, good for little; and to get it in pieces of any conſiderable length, ſo as to be of ſervice, will require much time and labour: But reflecting how much I needed it, and of what benefit it would be, I reſolved to make a trial of what I could do. So without more heſitation I went to work, and cutting a fibre cloſe to its root, I extricated that thread from all its windings, juſt as one does an entangled whipcord. When I had thus diſengaged a ſufficient length, I cut that off; and repeating the like operation, in about three hour's time, but with no little toil, I made up my load of different lengths juſt to my

liking. Having finiſhed this taſk, I filled the gourd, brought for that purpoſe, with water; and having firſt viewed the whole remaining part of the rock, I returned over the ſtone bridge home again.

THIS journey, though it took me up ſeveral days, and was attended with ſome fatigue, had yet given me great ſatisfaction; for now I was perſuaded I could not have one rival or enemy to fear in my whole dominions. And from the impoſſibility, as I ſuppoſed, of there being any, or of the ingreſs of any, unleſs by the ſame paſſage I entered at, and by which I was well aſſured they could never return, I grew contented, and blamed myſelf for the folly of my imaginary voices, as I called them then, and took it for a diſtemper of the fancy only.

THE next day I looked over my load of matweed, having given it that name, and ſeparated the different lengths from each other. I then found I had ſeveral pieces between forty and fifty feet long, of which I reſolved to get a good number more, to make me a drag-net, that I might try for ſome fiſh in the lake. A day or two after, therefore, I brought home another load of it. Then I picked out a ſmooth level ſpot upon the green ſwarth, and having prepared a great number of ſhort wooden pegs, I ſtrained a line of the matweed, about ten feet long, tying it at each end to a peg, and ſtruck a row of pegs along by that line about two inches aſunder; I next ſtrained another line of the ſame length, parallel to that, at the diſtance of forty feet from it, and ſtruck pegs thereby, correſponding to the former row; and from each peg on one ſide, to the oppoſite peg on the other, I tied a like length of my matline, quite through the whole number of pegs, when the work looked like the inſide of an harpſichord; I

afterwards drove pegs in like manner along the whole length of the two outermoſt longer lines, and tied ſhorter lines to them; ſo that the whole affair then repreſented the ſquares of a racket; the corners of each of which ſquares I tied very tight with ſmaller pieces of the line, till I had formed a compleat net of forty feet long and ten wide.

WHEN I had finiſhed my net, as I thought, I wrapped ſeveral ſtones in rags, and faſtned them to the bottom to ſink it; and ſome of the ſmalleſt, unſcooped, dry gourds to the top, to keep that part buoyant. I now longed to begin my trade, and carried the net to my boat with that intention; but, after two or three hawls, I found it would not anſwer for want of length, (though by chance I caught a blackiſh fiſh without ſcales, a little bigger than a whiting, but much longer, which ſtuck by the gills in it) ſo I left the net in the boat, reſolving to make an addition to it with all ſpeed, and returning to my grotto, I ſupped on the fiſh I had taken, and conſidered how to purſue my enterprize with better effect.

I provided me with another large parcel of line, and having brought two more lengths to perfection, I joined all together, and fixing one end on ſhore by a pole I had cut for that purpoſe, I launched my boat with the other end in it, taking a ſweep the length of my net, found to my ſtick again; and getting on ſhore, hawled up my net by both ends together. I found now I had mended my inſtrument, and taken a proper way of applying it; for by this means in five hawls I caught about ſixteen fiſh, of three or four different ſorts, and one ſhell-fiſh, almoſt like a lobſter, but without great claws, and with a very ſmall ſhort tail; which made me think, as the body was thrice as long as a lobſter's

in proportion, that it did not ſwim backwards like that creature, but only crawled forwards, (it having lobſter-like legs, but much ſhorter and ſtronger) and that the legs all ſtanding ſo forward, its tail was, by its motion, to keep the hinder part of the body from dragging upon the ground, as I obſerved it did when the creature walked on land; it then frequently flacking its ſhort tail.

THESE fiſh made me rich in proviſions. Some of them I eat freſh, and the remainder I ſalted down. But of all the kinds, my lobſter was the moſt delicious food, and made me almoſt three meals.

THUS finding there were fiſh to be had, though my preſent tackle ſeemed ſuitable enough to my family, yet could I not reſt till I had improved my fiſhery, by enlarging my net: For, as it was, even with my late addition, I muſt either ſweep little or no compaſs of ground, or it would have no bag behind me. Upon this I ſet to work, and ſhortly doubled the dimenſions of it. I had then a mind to try it at the mouth of my rill; ſo taking it with me the next time I croſſed the lake for water, and faſtening it to my pole cloſe by the right ſide of the rill, I ſwept a long compaſs round to the left, and cloſing the ends, attempted to draw up in the hollow cut of the rill. But by the time I had gathered up two thirds of the net, I felt a reſiſtance that quite amazed me. In ſhort, I was not able to ſtand againſt the force I felt: Whereupon, ſitting down in the rill, and clapping my feet to the two ſides of it, I exerted all my ſtrength, till finally I became conqueror, and brought up ſo ſhocking a monſter, that I was juſt riſing to run for my life on the ſight of it. But recollecting that the creature was hampered, and could not make ſo much reſiſtance on the land as in the wa-

ter, I ventured to drag the net up as far from the rill as my ſtrength and breath would permit me; and then running to the boat for my gun, I returned to the net to examine my prize. Indeed I had not inſtantly reſolution enough to ſurvey it; and when at length I aſſumed courage enough to do ſo, I could not perfectly diſtinguiſh the parts, they were ſo diſcompoſed; but taking hold of one end of the net I endeavoured to diſentangle the thing, and then drawing the net away, a moſt ſurpriſing ſight preſented itſelf: The creature reared upright, about three feet high, covered all over with long black ſhaggy hair like a bear, which hung down from his head and neck quite along his back and ſides. He had two fins, very broad and large, which, as he ſtood erect, looked like arms, and thoſe he waved and whirled about with incredible velocity; and though I wondered at firſt at it, I found afterwards it was the motion of theſe fins that kept him upright; for I perceived when they ceaſed their motion he fell flat on his belly. He had two very large feet, which he ſtood upon, but could not run, and but barely walk on them, which made me in the leſs haſte to diſpatch him; and after he had ſtood upon his feet about four minutes, clapping his fins to his ſides, he fell upon his belly.

WHEN I found he could not attack me, I was moving cloſer to him; but upon ſight of my ſtirring, up he roſe again, and whirled his fins about as before ſo long as he ſtood. And now I viewed him round, and found he had no tail at all; and that his hinder fins, or feet, very much reſembled a large frog's, but were at leaſt ten inches broad, and eighteen long, from heel to toe; and his legs were ſo ſhort, that when he ſtood upright his breech bore upon the ground. His belly, which he kept towards me, was of an aſh colour, and very broad, as was alſo his breaſt. His eyes were

ſmall and blue, with a large black ſight in the middle, and rather of an oval than round make. He had a long ſnout like a boar, and vaſt teeth. Thus having ſurveyed him near half an hour living, I made him riſe up once more, and ſhot him in the breaſt. He fell, and giving a loud howl, or groan, expired.

I HAD then time to ſee what elſe I had caught; and turning over the net, found a few of the ſame fiſh I had taken before, and ſome others of a flattiſh make, and one little lump of fleſh unform'd; which laſt, by all I could make of it, ſeemed to be either a ſpawn or young one of that I had ſhot.

The great creature was ſo heavy, I was afraid I muſt have cut him in pieces to get him to the boat; but with much ado, having ſtowed the reſt, I tumbled him on board. I then filled my water caſk, and rowed homewards. Being got to land, I was obliged to bring down my cart to carry my great beaſt fiſh, as I term'd him, up to the grotto. When I had got him thither, I had a notion of firſt taſting, and then, if I liked his fleſh, of ſalting him down and drying him; ſo having flead him, and taken out the guts and entrails, I broiled a piece of him; but it made ſuch a blaze, that moſt of the fat run into the fire, and the fleſh proved ſo dry and rank, that I could no ways endure it.

I THEN began to be ſorry I had taken ſo much pains for no profit, and had endangered my net into the bargain (for that had got a crack or two in the ſcuffle) and was thinking to throw away my large, but worthleſs acquiſition. However, as I was now prone to weighing all things before I threw it away, I reſolved to conſider a little; whereupon I changed my mind. Says I, here is a good warm ſkin, which, when dry, will make

me a rare cuſhion. Again, I have for a long while had no light beſide that of the day; but now, as this beaſt's fat makes ſuch a blaze in the fire, and iſſues in ſo great a quantity from ſuch a ſmall piece as I broiled, why may not I boil a good tallow or oil out of it? and if I can, I have not made ſo bad a hand of my time as I thought for.

In ſhort, I went immediately to work upon this ſubject, for I never let a project cool after I had once ſtarted it, and boiled as much of the fleſh as my kettle would hold; and letting it ſtand to cool, I found it turned out a very good oil for burning; though, I confeſs, I thought it would rather have made tallow. This ſucceſs quickened my induſtry, and I repeated the operation till I got about ten quarts of this ſtuff, which very well rewarded my labour. After I had extracted as much oil as I could from the beaſt fiſh, the creature having ſtrongly impreſſed my imagination, I conceived a new fancy in relation to it; and that was, having heard him make a deep howling groan at his death, I endeavoured to perſuade myſelf, and at laſt verily believed, that the voices I had ſo often heard in the dark weather, proceeded from numbers of theſe creatures diverting themſelves in the lake, or ſporting together on the ſhore: And this thought, in its turn, contributed to eaſe my apprehenſions in that reſpect.

CHAP. XIV.

The author paſſes the ſummer pleaſantly; hears the voices in the winter; ventures out; ſees a ſtrange ſight on the lake; his uneaſineſs at it; his dream; ſoliloquy; hears the voices again, and perceives a great ſhock on his building; takes up a beautiful woman; he thinks her dead, but recovers her; a deſcription of her; ſhe ſtays with him.

I PASSED the ſummer, though I had never yet ſeen the ſun's body, very much to my ſatisfaction; partly in the work I have been deſcribing, (for I had taken two more of the beaſt fiſh, and had a great quantity of oil from them) partly in building me a chimney in my antichamber, of mud and earth burnt on my own hearth into a ſort of brick; in making a window at one end of the aboveſaid chamber, to let in what little light would come through the trees when I did not chuſe to open my door; in moulding an earthen lamp for my oil; and finally, in providing and laying in ſtores, freſh and ſalt, (for I had now cured and dried many more fiſh) againſt winter. Theſe, I ſay, were my ſummer employments at home, intermixed with many agreeable excurſions. But now the winter coming on, and the days growing very ſhort, or indeed there being no day, properly ſpeaking, but a kind of twilight, I kept moſtly in my habitation: Though not ſo much as I had done the winter before, when I had no light within doors; and ſlept, or at leaſt lay ſtill great part of my time, for now my lamp was never out. I alſo turned two of my beaſt-fiſh ſkins into a rugg to cover my bed, and the third into a cuſhion, which I always ſat upon, and a very ſoft and warm cuſhion it made. All this

together rendered my life very eaſy, yea even comfortable.

AN indifferent perſon would now be apt to aſk, what would this man deſire more than he had? To this I anſwer, that I was contented while my condition was ſuch as I have been deſcribing; but a little while after the darkneſs or twilight came on, I frequently heard the voices again; ſometimes a few only at a time as it ſeemed, and then again in great numbers. This threw me into new fears, and I became as uneaſy as ever, even to the degree of growing quite melancholy; tho' otherwiſe I never received the leaſt injury from any thing. I fooliſhly attempted ſeveral times, by looking out at my window, to diſcover what theſe odd ſounds proceeded from, though I knew it was too dark to ſee any thing there.

I WAS now fully convinced, by a more deliberate attention to them, that they could not be uttered by the beaſt-kind, as I had before conjectured, but only by beings capable of articulate ſpeech: But then, what or where they were, it galled me to be ignorant of.

AT length one night, or day, I cannot ſay which, hearing the voices very diſtinctly, and praying very earneſtly to be either delivered from the uncertainty they had put me under, or to have them removed from me, I took courage, and arming myſelf with gun, piſtols, and cutlaſs, I went out of my grotto, and crept down the wood. I then heard them plainer than before, and was able to judge from what point of the compaſs they proceeded. Hereupon I went forward towards the ſound, till I came to the verge of the wood, where I could ſee the lake very well by the dazzle of the water. Thereon, as I thought, I beheld a fleet of

boats, covering a large compaſs, and not far from the bridge. I was ſhocked hereat beyond expreſſion. I could not conceive where they came from, or whether they would go; but ſuppoſed there muſt be ſome other paſſage to the lake than I had found in my voyage thro' the cavern, and that for certain they came that way, and from ſome place of which as yet I had no manner of knowledge.

WHILST I was entertaining myſelf with this ſpeculation, I heard the people in the boats laughing and talking very merrily, though I was too diſtant to diſtinguiſh the words. I diſcerned ſoon after all the boats, as I ſtill ſuppoſed them, draw up, and puſh for the bridge; preſently after, though I was ſure no boat entered the arch, I ſaw a multitude of people on the oppoſite ſhore, all marching towards the bridge; and what was the ſtrangeſt of all, there was not the leaſt ſign of a boat now left upon the whole lake. I then was in a greater conſternation than before; but was ſtill much more ſo, when I ſaw the whole poſſe of people, that as I have juſt ſaid were marching towards the bridge, coming over it to my ſide of the lake. At this my heart failed, and I was juſt going to run to my grotto for ſhelter; but taking one look more, I plainly diſcovered that the people, leaping one after another from the top of the bridge, as if into the water, and then riſing again, flew in a long train over the lake, the lengthways of it, quite out of my ſight, laughing, hallowing, and ſporting together; ſo that looking back again to the bridge, and on the lake, I could neither ſee perſon, boat, or any thing elſe, nor hear the leaſt noiſe or ſtir afterwards for that time.

I RETURNED to my grotto brimful of this amazing adventure; bemoaning my misfortune in being in a

place where I was like to remain ignorant of what was doing about me. For, says I, if I am in a land of spirits, as now I have little room to doubt, there is no guarding against them. I am never safe, even in my grotto; for that can be no security against such beings as can sail on the water without boats, and fly in the air without wings, as the case now appears to me; who can be here and there, and wherever they please. What a miserable state, I say, am I fallen to? I should have been glad to have had human converse, and to have found inhabitants in this place; but there being none, as I supposed hitherto, I contented myself with thinking I was at least safe from all those evils mankind, in society, are obnoxious to: But now, what may be the consequence of the next hour I know not; nay, I am not able to say, but whilst I speak, and show my discontent, they may at a distance conceive my thoughts, and be hatching revenge against me for my dislike of them.

THE pressure of my spirits inclining me to repose, I laid me down, but could get no rest; nor could all my most serious thoughts, even of the Almighty providence, give me relief under my present anxiety: And all this was only from my state of uncertainty concerning the reality of what I had heard and seen; and from the earnestness with which I coveted a satisfactory knowledge of those beings who had just taken their flight from me.

I REALLY believe the fiercest wild beast, or the most savage of mankind that had met me, and put me upon my defence, would not have given me half the trouble that then lay upon me; and the more, for that I had no seeming possibility of ever being rid of my apprehensions: So finding I could not sleep, I got up again;

but as I could not fly from myself, all the art I could use with myself was but in vain to obtain me any quiet.

In the height of my distress I had recourse to prayer, with no small benefit; begging, that if it pleased not the Almighty power to remove the object of my fears, at least to resolve my doubts about them, and to render them rather helpful than hurtful to me. I hereupon, as I always did on such occasions, found myself much more placid and easy, and began to hope the best, until I had almost persuaded myself that I was out of danger; and then laying myself down, I rested very sweetly, until I was wakened by the impulse of the following dream:

Methought I was in Cornwall at my wife's aunt's; and enquiring after her and my children, the old gentlewoman informed me both my wife and children had been dead some time; and that my wife, before her departure, desired her (that is her aunt) immediately upon my arrival, to tell me she was only gone to the lake, where I should be sure to see her, and be happy with her ever after. I then, as I fancied, ran to the lake to find her. In my passage she stopped me, crying, whether so fast, Peter? I am your wife, your Patty. Methought I did not know her, she was so altered; but observing her voice, and looking more wistfully at her, she appeared to me as the most beautiful creature I ever beheld. I then went to seize her in my arms, but the hurry of my spirits awakened me.

When I got up I kept at home, not caring even to look out at my door. My dream ran strangely in my head, and I had now nothing but Patty in my mind. Oh! cries I, how happy could I be with her, though I had only her in this solitude. Oh! that this was but

a reality, and not a dream. And indeed though it was but a dream, I could ſcarce refrain from running to the lake to meet my Patty. But then I checked my folly, and reaſoned myſelf into ſome degree of temper again. However, I could not forbear crying out, What! nobody to converſe with, nobody to aſſiſt, comfort, or counſel me! this is a melancholly ſituation indeed. Thus I run on lamenting, till I was almoſt weary, when on a ſudden I again heard the voices. Hark! ſays I, here they come again. Well, I am now reſolved to face them, come life, come death. It is not to be alone I thus dread; but to have company about me, and not know who or what, is death to me, worſe than I can ſuffer from them, be they who or what they will.

DURING my ſoliloquy the voices increaſed, and then by degrees diminiſhed as uſual; but I had ſcarce got my gun in my hand to purſue my reſolution of ſhewing myſelf to thoſe who uttered them, when I felt ſuch a thump upon the roof of my antichamber, as ſhook the whole fabric, and ſet me all over into a tremor; I then heard a ſort of ſhriek and a ruſtle near the door of my apartment: all which together ſeemed very terrible. But I having before determined to ſee what and who it was, reſolutely opened my door and leaped out. I ſaw nobody; all was quite ſilent, and nothing that I could perceive but my own fears a-moving. I went then ſoftly to the corner of the building, and there looking down by the glimmer of my lamp which ſtood in the window, I ſaw ſomething in human ſhape lying at my feet. I gave the word, who's there? Still no one anſwered. My heart was ready to force a way thro' my ſide. I was for a while fixed to the earth like a ſtatute. At length recovering, I ſtepped in, fetched my lamp, and returning, ſaw the very beautiful face my Patty appeared under in my dream; and not con-

ſidering that it was only a dream, I verily thought I had my Patty before me, but ſhe ſeemed to be ſtone dead. Upon viewing her other parts, for I had never yet removed my eyes from her face, I found ſhe had a ſort of brown chaplet, like lace, round her head, under and about which her hair was tucked up and twined; and ſhe ſeemed to me to be cloathed in a thin hair-coloured ſilk garment; which, upon trying to raiſe her, I found to be quite warm, and therefore hoped there was life in the body it contained. I then took her into my arms, and treading a ſtep backwards with her, I put out my lamp; however, having her in my arms, I conveyed her through the door-way in the dark into my grotto; here I laid her upon my bed, and then run out for my lamp.

THIS, thinks I, is an amazing adventure. How could Patty come here, and dreſt in ſilk and whalebone too? ſure that is not the reigning faſhion in England now? But my dream ſaid ſhe was dead. Why truly, ſays I, ſo ſhe ſeems to be. But be it ſo, ſhe is warm. Whether this is the place for perſons to inhabit after death or not I cannot tell, for I ſee there are people here, though I don't know them; but be it as it will, ſhe feels as fleſh and blood; and if I can but bring her to ſtir and act again as my wife, what matters it to me what ſhe is; it will be a great bleſſing and comfort to me; for ſhe never would have come to this very ſpot but for my good.

TOP-FULL of theſe thoughts, I re-entered my grotto, ſhut my door, and lighted my lamp; when going to my Patty, as I delighted to fancy her, I thought I ſaw her eyes ſtir a little. I then ſet the lamp farther off, for fear of offending them if ſhe ſhould look up; and warming the laſt glaſs I had reſerved of my Ma-

deira, I carried it to her, but ſhe never ſtirred. I now ſuppoſed the fall had abſolutely killed her, and was prodigiouſly grieved, when laying my hand on her breaſt, I perceived the fountain of life had ſome motion. This gave me infinite pleaſure; ſo not deſpairing, I dipped my finger in the wine, and moiſtened her lips with it two or three times, and I imagined they opened a little. Upon this I bethought me, and taking a tea-ſpoon, I gently poured a few drops of the wine by that means into her mouth. Finding ſhe ſwallowed it, I poured in another ſpoonful, and another, till I brought her to herſelf ſo well as to be able to ſit up. All this I did by a glimmering light which the lamp afforded from a diſtant part of the room, where I had placed it, as I have ſaid, out of her ſight.

I THEN ſpoke to her, and aſked divers queſtions, as ſhe had really been Patty, and underſtood me; in return of which ſhe uttered a language I had no idea of, though in the moſt muſical tone, and with the ſweeteſt accent I ever heard. It grieved me I could not underſtand her. However, thinking ſhe might like to be upon her feet, I went to lift her off the bed, when ſhe felt to my touch in the oddeſt manner imaginable: For while in one reſpect it was as though ſhe had been caſed in whalebone, it was at the ſame time as ſoft and warm as if ſhe had been naked.

I THEN took her in my arms and carried her into my antichamber again, where I would fain have entered into converſation, but found ſhe and I could make nothing of it together, unleſs we could underſtand one another's ſpeech. It is very ſtrange my dream ſhould have prepoſſeſſed me ſo of Patty, and of the alteration of her countenance, that I could by no means perſuade myſelf the perſon I had with me was not ſhe; though

upon a deliberate compariſon, Patty, as pleaſing as ſhe always was to my taſte, would no more come up to this fair creature, than a courſe alewife would to Venus herſelf.

You may imagine we ſtared heartily at each other; and I doubted not but ſhe wondered as much as I, by what means we came ſo near each other. I offered her every thing in my grotto which I thought might pleaſe her, ſome of which ſhe gratefully received, as appeared by her looks and behaviour. But ſhe avoided my lamp, and always placed her back toward it. I obſerving that, and aſcribing it to her modeſty in my company, let her have her will, and took care to ſet it in ſuch a poſition myſelf as ſeemed agreeable to her; though it deprived me of a proſpect I very much admired.

After we had ſat a good while, now and then, I may ſay, chattering to one another, ſhe got up and took a turn or two about the room. When I ſaw her in that attitude, her grace and motion perfectly charmed me, and her ſhape was incomparable; but the ſtrangeneſs of her dreſs put me to my trumps to conceive either what it was, or how it was put on.

Well, we ſupped together, and I ſet the beſt of every thing I had before her; nor could either of us forbear ſpeaking in our own tongue, though we were ſenſible neither of us underſtood the other. After ſupper I gave her ſome of my cordials, for which ſhe ſhewed great tokens of thankfulneſs, and often, in her way, by ſigns and geſtures, which were very far from being inſignificant, expreſſed her gratitude for my kindneſs. When ſupper had been ſome time over, I ſhewed her my bed, and made ſigns for her to go to it; but

ſhe ſeemed very ſhy of that, until I ſhewed her where I meant to ly myſelf, by pointing to myſelf, then to that, and again pointing to her and to my bed. When at length I had made this matter intelligible to her, ſhe lay down very compoſedly; and after I had taken care of my fire, and ſet the things I had been uſing for ſupper in their places, I laid myſelf down too: For I could have no ſuſpicious thoughts or fear of danger from a form ſo excellent.

I TREATED her for ſome time with all the reſpect imaginable, and never ſuffered her to do the leaſt part of my work. It was very inconvenient to both of us only to know each others meaning by ſigns; but I could not be otherwiſe than pleaſed to ſee that ſhe endeavoured all in her power to learn to talk like me. Indeed I was not behind-hand with her in that reſpect, ſtriving all I could to imitate her. What I all the while wondered at was, ſhe never ſhewed the leaſt diſquiet at her confinement: For I kept my door ſhut at firſt through fear of loſing her, thinking ſhe would have taken an opportunity to run away from me; for little did I then think ſhe could fly.

CHAP. XV.

WILKIN's afraid of loſing his new miſtreſs; they live together all winter; a remark on that; they begin to know each others language; a long diſcourſe between them at croſs purpoſes; ſhe flies; they engage to be man and wife.

AFTER my new love had been with me a fortnight, finding my water run low, I was greatly troubled at the thought of quitting her any time to go for more; and having hinted it to her with ſeeming uneaſineſs, ſhe could not for a while fathom my meaning; but when ſhe ſaw me much confuſed, ſhe came at length, by the many ſigns I made, to imagine it was my concern for her which made me ſo; whereupon ſhe expreſſively enough ſignified I might be eaſy, for ſhe did not fear any thing happening to her in my abſence. On this, as well as I could declare my meaning, I entreated her not to go away before my return. As ſoon as ſhe underſtood what I ſignified to her by actions, ſhe ſat down with her arms acroſs, leaning her head againſt the wall, to aſſure me ſhe would not ſtir. However, as I had before nailed a cord to the outſide of the door, I tied that for caution's ſake to the tree, for fear of the worſt: But I believe ſhe had not the leaſt deſign of removing.

I TOOK my boat, net, and water caſk as uſual, deſirous of bringing her home a freſh fiſh dinner; and ſucceeded ſo well, as to catch enough for ſeveral good meals, and to ſpare. What remained I ſalted, and found ſhe liked that better than the freſh, after a few days ſalting; though ſhe did not ſo well approve of

that I had formerly pickled and dried. As my ſalt grew very low, though I had been as ſparing of it as poſſible, I now reſolved to try making ſome, and the next ſummer I effected it.

THUS we ſpent the remainder of the winter together, until the days began to be light enough for me to walk abroad a little in the middle of them: For I was now under no apprehenſions of her leaving me; as ſhe had before this time had ſo many opportunities of doing ſo, but never once attempted it.

I MUST here make one reflection upon our conduct, which you will almoſt think incredible, *viz.* That we two, of different ſexes, not wanting our peculiar deſires, fully inflamed with love to each other, and no outward obſtacle to prevent our wiſhes, ſhould have been together under the ſame roof alone for five months, converſing together from morning to night, (for by this time ſhe pretty well underſtood Engliſh, and I her language) and yet I ſhould never have claſped her in my arms, or have ſhewn any further amorous deſires to her than what the deference I all along paid her could give her room to ſurmiſe. Nay, I can affirm, that I did not even then know that the covering ſhe wore was not the work of art, but the work of nature; for I really took it for ſilk: Though it muſt be premiſed, that I had never ſeen it by any other light than of my lamp. Indeed the modeſty of her carriage, and ſweetneſs of her behaviour to me, had ſtruck into me ſuch a dread of offending her, that though nothing upon earth could be more capable of exciting paſſion than her charms, I could have died rather than have attempted to ſalute her only, without actual invitation.

WHEN the weather cleared up a little, by the length-

ning of daylight, I took courage one afternoon to invite her to walk with me to the lake; but she sweetly excused herself from it, whilst there was such a frightful glare of light, as she said; but looking out at the door, told me if I would not go out of the wood she would accompany me; so we agreed to take a turn only there. I first went myself over the style of the door, and thinking it too high for her, I took her in my arms and lifted her over. But even when I had her in this manner, I knew not what to make of her cloathing, it sat so true and close; but seeing her by a steadier and truer light in the grove, though a heavy gloomy one, than my lamp had afforded, I begged she would let me know of what silk or other composition her garment was made. She smiled, and asked me if mine was not the same under my jacket. No lady, says I, I have nothing but my skin under my cloaths. What do you mean? replies she, somewhat tartly: But indeed I was afraid something was the matter, by that nasty covering you wear, that you might not be seen. Are not you a * Glumm? Yes, says I, fair creature. (Here, though you may conceive she spoke part English, part her own tongue, and I the same, as we best understood each other, yet I shall give you our discourse, word for word, in plain English) Then, says she, I am afraid you must have been a very bad man, and have been Crashee †, which I should be very sorry to hear. I told her I believed we were none of us so good as we might be, but I hoped my faults had not at most exceeded other mens; but I had suffered abundance of hardships in my time; and that at last providence having settled me in this spot, from whence I had no prospect of ever departing, it was none of the least of its mercies, to bring to my knowledge and company

* *A Man.* † *Slit.*

the moſt exquiſite piece of all his works, in her; which I ſhould acknowledge as long as I lived. She was ſurpriſed at this diſcourſe, and aſked me (if I did not mean to impoſe upon her, and was indeed an Ingoraſhee * Glumm) why I ſhould tell her I had no proſpect of departing from hence? Have not you, ſays ſhe, the ſame proſpect that I or any other perſon has of departing? Sir, added ſhe, you don't do well, and really I fear you are ſlit, or you would not wear this naſty cumberſome coat (taking hold of my jacket ſleeve) if you were not afraid of ſhewing the ſigns of a bad life upon your natural cloathing.

I COULD not for my heart imagine what way there was to get out of my dominions; but certainly, thought I, there muſt be ſome or other, or ſhe would not be ſo peremptory. And as to my jacket, and ſhewing myſelf in my natural cloathing, I profeſs ſhe made me bluſh; and, but for ſhame, I would have ſtripped to my ſkin to have ſatisfied her. But, madam, ſays I, pray pardon me, for you are really miſtaken; I have examined every nook and corner of this new world in which we now are, and can find no poſſible outlet; nay, even by the ſame way I came in, I am ſure it is impoſſible to get out again. Why, ſays ſhe, what outlets have you ſearched for, or what way can you expect out, but the way you came in? And why is that impoſſible to return by again? If you are not ſlit, is not the air open to you? will not the ſky admit you to patrole in it as well as other people? I tell you, ſir, I fear you have been ſlit for your crimes; and though you have been ſo good to me, that I cannot help loving of you heartily for it; yet, if I thought you had been ſlit, I would not, nay could not, ſtay a moment longer with you; no, though it ſhould break my heart to leave you.

* *Unſlit.*

I FOUND myſelf now in a ſtrange quandary, longing to know what ſhe meant by being ſlit; and had a hundred ſtrange notions in my head whether I was ſlit or not; for though I knew what the word naturally ſignified well enough, yet in what manner, or by what figure of ſpeech ſhe applied it to me, I had no idea of. But ſeeing her look a little angrily upon me, pray madam, ſays I, don't be offended, if I take the liberty to aſk you what you mean by the word Craſhee,* ſo often repeated by you; for I am an utter ſtranger to what you mean by it. Sir, ſays ſhe, pray anſwer me firſt how you came here. Madam, replied I, will you pleaſe to take a walk to the verge of the wood, and I will ſhew you the very paſſage. Sir, ſays ſhe, I perfectly know the range of the rocks all round; and by the leaſt deſcription, without going to ſee them, can tell from which you deſcended. In truth, ſaid I, moſt charming lady, I deſcended from no rock at all; nor would I for a thouſand worlds, attempt what could not be accompliſhed but by my deſtruction. Sir, ſays ſhe, in ſome anger, it is falſe, and you impoſe upon me. I declare to you, ſays I, madam, what I tell you is ſtrictly true, I never was near the ſummit of any of the ſurrounding rocks, or any thing like it; but as you are not far from the verge of the wood, be ſo good as to ſtep a little further, and I will ſhew you my entrance in hither. Well, ſays ſhe, now this odious dazzle of light is leſſened, I don't care if I do go with you.

WHEN we came far enough to ſee the bridge, there, madam, ſays I, there is my entrance, where the ſea pours into this lake from yonder cavern. It is not poſſible, ſays ſhe; this is another untruth; and as I ſee you would deceive me, and are not to be believed;

* *Slit.*

farewel; I muſt be gone. But hold, ſays ſhe, let me aſk you one thing more; that is, by what means did you come through that cavern? you could not have uſed to have come over the rock. Bleſs me, madam, ſays I, do you think I and my boat could fly? Come over the rock did you ſay? No madam, I ſailed from the great ſea, the main ocean, in my boat, thro' that cavern, into this very lake here. What do you mean by your boat, ſays ſhe? You ſeem to make two things of your boat you ſay you ſailed with, and yourſelf. I do ſo, replied I, for madam I take myſelf to be good fleſh and blood, but my boat is made of wood and other materials. Is it ſo, ſays ſhe, and pray where is this boat that is made of wood and other materials, under your jacket? Lord, madam, ſays I, you put me in fear that you was angry, but now I hope you only joke with me; what, put a boat under my jacket? No madam, my boat is in the lake. What! more untruths, ſays ſhe. No madam, I replied, if you would be ſatisfied of what I ſay, every word of which is as true as that my boat now is in the lake, pray walk with me thither, and make your own eyes judges what ſincerity I ſpeak with. To this ſhe agreed, it growing duſky; but aſſured me, if I did not give her good ſatisfaction, I ſhould ſee her no more.

WE arrived at the lake; and going to my wet dock, now madam, ſays I, pray ſatisfy yourſelf, whether I ſpake true or no. She looked at my boat, but could not yet frame a proper notion of it. Says I, madam, in this very boat I ſailed from the main ocean, thro' that cavern, into this lake; and ſhall at laſt think myſelf the happieſt of all men, if you continue with me, love me, and credit me; and I promiſe you I will never deceive you, but think my life happily ſpent in your ſervice. I found ſhe was hardly content yet to believe

what I told her of my boat to be true, until I ſtepped into it, and puſhing from the ſhore, took my oars in my hand, and ſailed along the lake by her, as ſhe walked on the ſhore. At laſt ſhe ſeemed ſo well reconciled to me and my boat, that ſhe deſired I would take her in. I immediately did ſo, and we ſailed a good way; and as we returned to my dock, I deſcribed to her how I procured the water we drank, and brought it to ſhore in that veſſel.

WELL, ſays ſhe, I have ſailed, as you call it, many a mile in my lifetime, but never in ſuch a thing as this. I own it will ſerve very well, where one has a great many things to carry from place to place; but to be labouring thus at an oar when one intends pleaſure in ſailing, is, in my mind, a moſt ridiculous piece of ſlavery. Why, pray madam, how would you have me ſail? for getting into the boat only will not carry us this way or that, without uſing ſome force. But, ſays ſhe, pray where did you get this boat, as you call it? O! madam, ſays I, that is too long and fatal a ſtory to begin upon now; this boat was made many thouſand miles from hence, among a people coal black, a quite different ſort from us; and, when I firſt had it, I little thought of ſeeing this country: But I will make a faithful relation of all to you when we come home. Indeed, I began to wiſh heartily we were there, for it grew into the night; and having ſtrolled ſo far without my gun, I was afraid of what I had before ſeen and heard, and hinted our return; but I found my motion was diſagreeable to her, and ſo I dropped it.

I NOW perceived and wondered at it, that the later it grew, the more agreeable it ſeemed to her; and as I had now brought her into a good humour again, by ſeeing and ſailing in my boat, I was not willing to pre-

vent its increaſe: I told her, if ſhe pleaſed we would land, and when I had docked my boat I would accompany her where and as long as ſhe liked. As we talked and walked by the lake, ſhe made a little run before me, and ſprung into it. Perceiving this, I cried out; whereupon ſhe merrily called on me to follow her. The light was then ſo dim, as prevented my having more than a confuſed ſight of her when ſhe jumped in; and looking earneſtly after her, I could diſcern nothing more than a ſmall boat on the water, which ſkimmed along at ſo great a rate, that I almoſt loſt ſight of it preſently; but running along the ſhore for fear of loſing her, I met her gravely walking to meet me; and then had entirely loſt ſight of the boat upon the lake. This, ſays ſhe, accoſting me with a ſmile, is my way of ſailing, which, I perceive by the fright you were in, you are altogether unacquainted with; and as you tell me you came from ſo many thouſand miles off, it is poſſible you may be made differently from me; but ſurely we are the part of the creation which has had moſt care beſtowed upon it: And I ſuſpect from all your diſcourſe, to which I have been very attentive, it is poſſible you may no more be able to fly than to ſail as I do. No, charming creature, ſays I, that I cannot, I'll aſſure you. She then ſtepping to the edge of the lake, for the advantage of a deſcent before her, ſprung up into the air, and away ſhe went further than my eyes could follow her.

I WAS quite aſtoniſhed. So, ſays I, then all is over, all a deluſion, which I have ſo long been in, a mere phantom! better had it been for me never to have ſeen her, than thus to loſe her again! But what could I expect had ſhe ſtaid? for it is plain ſhe is no human compoſition. But, ſays I, ſhe felt like fleſh too, when I lifted her out at the door.—I had but very little time

for reflection; for in about ten minutes after she had left me in this mixture of grief and amazement, she alighted just by me on her feet.

Her return, as she plainly saw, filled me with a transport not to be concealed; and which, as she afterwards told me, was very agreeable to her. Indeed, I was some moments in such an agitation of mind, from these unparallelled incidents, that I was like one thunderstruck; but coming presently to myself, and clasping her in my arms with as much love and passion as I was capable of expressing, and for the first time with any desire, are you returned again, kind angel, said I, to bless a wretch who can only be happy in adoring you? Can it be, that you, who have so many advantages over me, should quit all the pleasures that nature has formed you for, and all your friends and relations, to take an asylum in my arms? But I here make you a tender of all I am able to bestow—my love and constancy. Come, come, says she, no more raptures, I find you are a worthier man than I thought I had reason to take you for; and I beg your pardon for my distrust, whilst I was ignorant of your imperfections; but now I verily believe all you have said is true; and I promise you, as you have seemed so much to delight in me, I will never quit you till death, or other as fatal accident, shall part us. But we will now, if you chuse, go home, for I know you have been some time uneasy in this gloom, though agreeable to me: For, giving my eyes the pleasure of looking eagerly on you, it conceals my blushes from your sight.

In this manner, exchanging mutual endearments, and soft speeches, hand in hand we arrived at the grotto, where we that night consummated our nuptials, without further ceremony than mutual solemn engagements

to each other: which are, in truth, the eſſence of marriage, and all that was there and then in our power.

CHAP. XVI.

The author's diſappointment at firſt going to bed with his new wife; ſome ſtrange circumſtances relating thereto: ſhe reſolves ſeveral queſtions he aſks her, and clears up his fears as to the voices; a deſcription of Swangeans.

EVERY calm is ſucceeded by a ſtorm, as is every ſtorm by its calm; for after ſupper, in order to give my bride the opportunity of undreſſing alone, which I thought might be moſt agreeable the firſt night, I withdrew into the antichamber, until I thought ſhe was laid; and then, having firſt diſpoſed of my lamp, I moved ſoftly towards her, and ſtepped into bed to, when, on my nearer approach to her, I imagined ſhe had her clothes on. This ſtruck a thorough damp over me; and aſking her the reaſon of it, not being able to touch the leaſt bit of her fleſh but her face and hands, ſhe burſt out a laughing; and running her hand along my naked ſide, ſoon perceived the difference ſhe before had made ſuch doubt of, between herſelf and me. Upon which ſhe fairly told me, that neither ſhe, or any perſon ſhe had ever ſeen before, had any other covering than what they were born with, and which they would not willingly part with but with their lives. This ſhocked me terribly; not from the horror of the thing itſelf, or any diſtaſte I had to this covering; for it was quite ſmooth, warm, and ſofter than velvet, or the fineſt ſkin imaginable; but from an apprehenſion of her

being so wholly incased in it, that though I had so fine a companion, and now a wife, yet I should have no conjugal benefit from her, either to my own gratification, or the increase of our species.

In the height of my impatience, I made divers essays for unfolding this covering; but unsuccessfully. Surely, says I, there must be some way of coming at my wishes, or why should she seem so shy of me at first, and now we are under engagements to each other, meet me half way with such a yielding compliance. I could, if I had had time to spare, have gone on starting objections and answering them, in my own breast, a great while longer, for I now knew not what to make of it; but being prompted to act as well as think, and feeling as tenderly as possible upon her bosom for the folds or plaits of her garment, she lying perfectly still, and perceiving divers flat broad ledges like whalebone seemingly under her covering, which closely infolded her body, I thought it might be all laced on together somewhat like stays, and felt behind for the lacing. At length, perceiving me so puzzled, and beyond conception vexed at my disappointment, of a sudden, lest I should grow outragious, which I was almost come to, she threw down all those seeming ribbs flat to her side; so imperceptibly to me, that I knew nothing of the matter, though I lay close to her; till putting forth my hand again to her bosom, the softest skin and most delightful body, free from all impediment, presented itself to my wishes, and gave up itself to my embraces.

I SLEPT very soundly until morning, and so did she; but at waking I was very solicitous to find out what sort of being I had had in my arms, and with what qualities her garment was endowed, or how contrived, that notwithstanding all my fruitless attempts to uncover

her, she herself could so instantaneously dispose of it, undiscerned by me: Well, thought I, she is my wife, I will be satisfied in every thing, for surely she will not now refuse to gratify my curiosity.

WE rose with the light, but surely no two were ever more amorous, or more delighted with each other. I being up first, lighted the fire, and prepared breakfast of some fish soup, thickened with my cream-cheese; and then calling her, I kept my eye towards the bed to see how she dressed herself; but throwing aside the cloaths, she stepped out ready dressed and came to me. When I had kissed her, and wished her a good day, we sat down to breakfast; which being soon over, I told her I hoped every minute of our lives would prove as happy as those we so lately passed together; which she seemed to wish with equal ardour. I then told her, now she was my wife, I thought proper to know her name, which I had never before asked, for fear of giving uneasiness; for, as I added, I did not doubt she had observed in my behaviour, ever since I first saw her, a peculiar tenderness for her, and a sedulous concern not to offend; which had obliged me, hitherto, to stifle several questions I had to ask her, whenever they would be agreeable to her. She then bid me begin; for as she was now my wife, whilst I was speaking it became her to be all attention, and to give me the utmost satisfaction she could in all I should require, as she herself should have so great an interest in every thing for the future which would oblige me.

COMPLIMENTS (if in compliance with old custom I may call them so, for they were by us delivered from the heart) being a little over on both sides, I first desired to know what name she went by before I found her: For, says I, having only hitherto called you ma-

dam, and my lady, beſides the future expreſſion of my love to you in the word dear, I would know your original name, that ſo I might join it with that tender epithet. That you ſhall, ſays ſhe, and alſo my family, at another opportunity; but as my name will not take up long time to repeat at preſent, it is YOUWARKEE. And pray, ſays ſhe, now gratify me with the knowledge of yours. My dear Youwarkee, ſays I, my name was PETER WILKINS when I heard it laſt; but that is ſo long ago, I had almoſt forgot it. And now, ſays I, there is another thing you can give me a pleaſure in. You need then only mention it, my dear Peter, ſays ſhe. That is, ſays I, only to tell me if you did not by ſome accident fall from the top of the rock over my habitation, upon the roof of it, when I firſt took you in here; and whether you are of the country upon the rocks? She ſoftly ſmiling, anſwered, My dear Peter you run your queſtions too thick; as to my country which is not on the rocks, as you ſuppoſe, but at a vaſt diſtance from hence, I ſhall leave that till I may hereafter, at more leiſure ſpeak of my family, as I promiſed you before; but as to how I came into this grotto, I knew not at firſt, but ſoon perceived your humanity had brought me in to take care of me after a terrible fall I had:—Not from the rock, as you ſuppoſe, for then I muſt not now have been living to enjoy you; but from a far leſs conſiderable height in the air. I'll tell you how it happened. A parcel of us young people were upon a merry Swangean *, round this Arkoe †, which we uſually divert ourſelves with at ſet times of the year, chaſing and purſuing one another, ſometimes ſoaring to an extravagant height, and then ſhooting down again with ſurpriſing precipitancy, until we even touch the trees, when of a ſudden we mount again and

* *Flight.* † *Water ſurrounded with a wood.*

away. I say, being of this party, and pursued by one of my comerades, I descended down to the very trees, and she after me; but as I mounted, she overshooting me, brushed so stifly against the upper part of my Graundee*, that I lost my bearing; and being so near the branches, before I could recover it again, I sunk into the tree, and rendered my Graundee useless to me, so that down I came, and that with so much force, that I but just felt my fall, and lost my senses. Whether I cried out or no upon my coming to the ground, I cannot say; but if I did, my companion was too far gone by that time to hear or take notice of me; as she probably in so swift a flight saw not my fall. As to the condition I was in, or what happened immediately afterwards, I must be obliged to you for a relation of that. But one thing I was quickly sensible of, and never can forget, *viz.* that I owe my life to your care and kindness to me.

I TOLD her she should have that part of her story from me another time; but, says I, there is something so amazing in these flights, or Swangeans, as you call them, that I must, as the questions for this day, beg you would let me know what is the method of them? what is the nature of your covering? (which was at first such an obstacle to my wishes) how you put it on? and how you use it in your Swangean?

SURELY, my dearest Peter, says she, but that I can deny you nothing, since you are my Barkatt†, which you seem so passionately to desire, the latter of your questions would not be answered, for it must put me to the blush. As to our method of flight, you saw some-

* *The covering and wings of skin they flew with.*

† *Husband.*

what of that laſt night, though in a light hardly ſufficient for you; and, for the nature of my covering, you perceive that now: but to ſhew you how it is put on, as you call it, I am afraid it will be neceſſary, as far as I can, to put it off, before I can make you comprehend that; which having done, the whole will be no further a myſtery. But not to be tedious, is it your command that I uncover? Lay that upon me, it ſhall be done. Here I was at a plunge, whether to proceed or drop the queſtion. Thinks I, if my curioſity ſhould be fatal to me, as I may ſee ſomething I can never bear hereafter, I am undone. She wants the command! why ſo? I know not the conſequence. What ſhall I do? At laſt, ſomewhat reſolutely, I aſked her, Whether her anſwer, either way, to my command, would cauſe her to leave me, or me to love her leſs? She ſeeing my heſitation, and perceiving the cauſe, was ſo pleaſed, that ſhe cry'd out, No, my dear Peter, nor that, nor all the force on earth, ſhall ever part me from you. But I conceive you are afraid you ſhall diſcover ſomething in me you may not like. I fear not that: but an immodeſt appearance before you I cannot ſuffer myſelf to be guilty of, but under your own command.

My lovely Youwarkee, ſays I, delay then my deſires no longer; and ſince you require a warrant from me, I do command you to do it. Immediately her Graundee flew open (diſcovering her naked body, juſt to the hip, and round the rim of her belly) and expanding itſelf, was near ſix feet wide. Here my love and curioſity had a hard conflict; the one to gain my attention to the Graundee, and the other to retain my eyes and thoughts on her lovely body, which I had never beheld ſo much of before. Tho' I was very unwilling to keep her uncovered too long, I could not eaſily diſ-

miſs ſo charming a ſight. I attentively viewed her lovely fleſh, and examined the caſe that enſhrined it: But as I ſhall give you a full deſcription of this Graundee hereafter, in a more proper place, I will mention it no further here, than to tell you, that when I had narrowly ſurveyed the upper part of it, ſhe in a moment contracted it round her ſo cloſe, that the niceſt eye could not perceive the joining of the parts.

INDEED my dear Youwarkee, ſays I, you had the beſt of reaſons for ſaying you was not fearful I ſhould diſcover any thing in you diſpleaſing; for, if my boſom glowed with love before, you have now therein raiſed an ardent flame, which neither time or ought elſe will ever be able to extinguiſh. I now almoſt conceive how you fly, though yet I am at a loſs to know how you extend and make uſe of the lower part of your Graundee, which riſes up and meets the upper; but I will rather gueſs at that by what I have ſeen, than raiſe the colour higher in thoſe fair cheeks, which are, however, adorned with bluſhes. Then running to her, and taking her in my arms, I called her the gift of heaven; and left off further interrogatories until another opportunity.

CHAP. XVII.

Youwarkee cannot bear a ſtrong light; Wilkin's makes her ſpectacles which help her; a deſcription of them.

YOUWARKEE and I having no other company than one another's, we talked together almoſt from morning to night, in order to learn each others dialect. But how compliable ſoever ſhe was in all other reſpects, I could not perſuade her to go out with me to fetch

water, or to the lake, in the day time. It being now the light ſeaſon, I wanted her to be more abroad; but ſhe excuſed herſelf, telling me her people never came into thoſe luminous parts of the country during the falſe glare, as they called it, but kept altogether at home, where their light was more moderate and ſteadier; and that the place where I reſided was not frequented by them for half the year, and at other times only upon parties of pleaſure; it not being worth while to ſettle habitations where they could not abide always. She ſaid Normbdſgrſutt was the fineſt region in the world, where her king's court was, and a vaſt kingdom. I aſked her twice or thrice more to name the country to me, but not all the art we could uſe, her's in dictating, and mine in endeavouring to pronounce it, would render me conqueror of that poor monoſyllable; for as ſuch it ſounded from her ſweet lips: So I relinquiſhed the name to her; telling her, whenever ſhe had any more occaſion to mention the place, I deſired it might be under the ſtile of Doorpt Swangeanti*, which ſhe promiſed; but wondered, as ſhe could ſpeak the other ſo glibly, as ſhe called it, I could not do ſo too.

I TOLD her, that the light of my native country was far ſtronger than any I had ever ſeen ſince my arrival at Graundevolet, (for that I found by her was the name my dominions went by) and that we had a ſun, or ball of fire, which rolled over our heads every day, with ſuch a light and ſuch a heat, that it would ſometimes almoſt ſcorch one it was ſo hot; and was of ſuch brightneſs, that the eye could not look at it without danger of blindneſs. She was heartily glad, ſhe ſaid, ſhe was not born in ſo wretched a land; and ſhe did not believe there was any other ſo good as her own. I thought

* *The Land of Flight.*

no benefit could arise from my combating these innocent prejudices, so I let them alone.

SHE had often lamented to me the difference of our eye-sight, and the trouble it was to her that she could not at all times go about with me, until it gave me a good deal of uneasiness to see her concern. At last I told her, that though I believed it would be impossible to reduce my sight to the standard of her's, yet I was persuaded I could bring her's to bear the strongest light I had ever seen in this country. She was mightily pleased with the thought of that, and said she wished I might; for she was sensible of no grief like being obliged to stay at home when I went abroad on my business, and was resolved to try my experiment, if I pleased; and in the mean time should heartily pray for the success.—I light on the following invention:

I rummaged over all my old things, and by good luck found an old crape hatband. This I tried myself, single before my own eyes, in the strongest light we had; but believing I had not yet obscured it enough, I doubled it, and then thought it might do; but for fear it should not, I trebled it, and then it seemed too dark for eyes like mine to discover objects through it, and so I judged it would suit her's: For I was determined to produce something, if possible, that would do at first, without repetition of trial, which I thought would only deject her more, by making her look on the matter as impracticable. I now only wanted a proper method for fixing it on her; and this I thought would be easily effected; but had much more difficulty in it than I imagined. At first I purposed to tie the crape over her eyes; but trying it myself, I found it very rough and fretting. I then designed fixing it to an old crown of a hat that held my fish hooks and lines, and so let it

hang down before her face; but that alſo had its inconveniencies, as it would flap her eyes in windy weather, and would be not only uſeleſs but very troubleſome in flight: So that I was ſcarce ever more puzzled before. At laſt I thought of a method that anſwered exceedingly well, the hint of which I took from ſomewhat I had ſeen with my maſter when I was at ſchool, which he called goggles, and which he uſed to tie round his head to ſcreen his eyes in riding. The thing I made upon that plan was compoſed of old hat, pieces of ramſhorn, and the above-mentioned crape.

When I had finiſhed the whole apparatus, I tried it firſt upon myſelf, and finding great reaſon to believe it would perfectly anſwer the intention, I ran directly to Youwarkee. Come, ſays I, my dear, will you go with me to the water-rill? For I muſt fetch ſome this morning. She ſhook her head, and, with tears in her eyes, wiſhed ſhe could; but, ſays ſhe, let me ſee how light it is abroad? No, ſays I, my love, you muſt not look out till you go. Indeed, ſays ſhe, if it did not affect my eyes and head, you ſhould not aſk me twice. Well, ſays I, my Youwarkee, I am now come to take you with me, and that you may not ſuffer by it, turn about and let me apply the remedy I told you of for your ſight. She wanted much to ſee firſt what it was; but I begged her to forbear, till ſhe tried whether it would be uſeful or not. She told me, ſhe would abſolutely ſubmit to my direction; ſo I adjuſted the thing to her head. Now, ſays I, you have it on, let us go out and try it; and let me know the moment you find the light offenſive, and take particular notice how you are affected. Hereupon away we marched, and I heard no complaint in all our walk to the lake.

Now my dear Youwarkee, ſays I, when we got

there, what do you think of my contrivance, can you ſee at all? Yes, very well, ſays ſhe: But my dear Peter, you have taken the advantage of the twilight, I know, to deceive me; and I had rather have ſtayed at home, than have ſubjected you to return in the night for the ſake of my company. I then aſſured her it was mid-day and no later, which pleaſed her mightily; and to ſatisfy her, I untied the ſtring behind, and juſt let her be convinced it was ſo. When I had fixed the ſhade on her head again, ſhe put up her hands, and felt the ſeveral materials of which it conſiſted; and after expreſſing her admiration of it, ſo, my dear Peter, ſays ſhe, you have now encumbered yourſelf with a wife indeed; for ſince I can come abroad in a glaring light, with ſo much eaſe, you will never henceforward be without my company.

YOUWARKEE being thus in ſpirits, we launched the boat, watered, took a draught of fiſh, and returned, paſſing the night at home in talking of the ſpectacles, (for that was the name I told her they muſt go by) and of the fiſhing; for that exerciſe delighted her to a great degree. But, above all, the ſpectacles were her chief theme. She handled them, and looked at them again and again, and aſked ſeveral rational queſtions about them; as how could they have that effect on her eyes, enabling her to ſee? and the like. She ventured out with them on next day by herſelf; and as ſhe threatened, ſhe was as good as her word, for ſhe ſcarcely afterwards let me go abroad by myſelf, but accompanied me every where freely, and with delight.

CHAP. XVIII.

Youwarkee with child; Wilkins's ſtock of proviſions; no beaſt or fiſh in Youwarkee's country; the voices again; her reaſon for not ſeeing thoſe who uttered them; ſhe bears a ſon; a hard ſpeech in her lying-in; divers birds appear; their eggs gathered; how Wilkins kept account of time.

ABOUT three months after we were married, as we called it, Youwarkee told me ſhe believed ſhe was breeding, and I was mightily pleaſed with it; for tho' I had two children before by Patty, yet I had never ſeen either of them, ſo that I longed to be a father. I ſometimes amuſed myſelf with whimſical conjectures, as, whether the child would have a Graundee or not? which of us it would be moſt like? how we ſhould do without a midwife? and what muſt become of the infant, as we had no milk, in caſe Youwarkee could not ſuckle it? Indeed, I had leiſure enough for indulging ſuch reveries; for, having laid in our winter ſtores, my wife and I had nothing to do but enjoy ourſelves over a good fire, prattling and toying together, making as good cheer as we could; and truly that was none of the worſt, for we had as fine bread as need to be eaten; we had pears preſerved; all ſorts of dried fiſh; and once a fortnight, for two or three days together, had freſh fiſh: we had vinegar, and a biting herb I had found for pepper; and ſeveral ſorts of nuts; ſo there was no want.

IT was at this time, after my return from watering one day, where Youwarkee had been with me, that, having taken ſeveral fiſh, and amongſt them ſome I had not before ſeen, I aſked her, as we were preparing and

ſalting ſome of them, how they managed fiſh in her country, and what variety they had of them there? She told me ſhe neither ever ſaw or heard of a fiſh in her life till ſhe came to me. How! ſays I, no fiſh amongſt you? Why you want one of the greateſt dainties that can be ſet upon a table. Do you wholly eat fleſh, ſays I, at Doorpt Swangeanti? Fleſh, ſays ſhe laughingly, of what? Nay, ſays I, you know beſt what the beaſts of your country are; we have in England, where I was born and bred, oxen, very large hogs, ſheep, lambs, and calves, theſe make our ordinary diſhes; then we have deer, hares, rabbits, and theſe are reckoned dainties; beſides numberleſs kinds of poultry and fiſh without ſtint. I never heard of any of theſe things in my life, ſays Youwarkee, nor did I ever eat any thing but fruits and herbs, and what is made from them at Normbdfgrfutt. You will ſpeak that crabbed word, ſays I, again. I beg your pardon my dear, ſays ſhe, at Doorpt Swangeanti, I ſay, nor I, or any one elſe to my knowledge, ever eat any ſuch thing: But ſeeing you eat fiſh, as you call them, I made no ſcruple of doing ſo too, and like them very well, eſpecially the ſalted ones; for I never taſted what you call ſalt neither till I came here. I can't think, ſays I, what ſort of a country your's is, or how you all live there. O, ſays ſhe, there's no want; I wiſh you and I were there.—I was afraid I had talked too much of her country already, ſo we called a new cauſe.

Soon after winter had ſet in, as we were in bed one night, I heard the voices again. And though my wife had told me of her country folks, Swangeans, in that place, I, being frighted a little, waked her; and ſhe hearing them too, cried out, there they are, it is ten to one but my ſiſter, or ſome of our family, are there. Hark! I believe I hear her voice. I myſelf hearkened

very attentively; and by this time underſtanding a great deal of their language, I not only could diſtinguiſh different ſpeakers, but knew the meaning of ſeveral of the words they pronounced.

I WOULD have had Youwarkee have gotten up, and called to them. Not for the world, ſays ſhe, have you a mind to part with me? Though I have no intent to leave you, as I am with child, if they ſhould try to force me away, without my conſent, I may receive ſome injury, to the danger of my own life, or at leaſt of the child's. This reaſon perfectly ſatisfying me, endeared the loving creature to me ten times more, if poſſible, than ever.

The next ſummer brought me a Yawm*, as fair as alabaſter. My wife was delivered without the uſual aſſiſtance, and had as favourable a labour as could be. The firſt thing I did, after giving her ſome fiſh ſoup, made as ſkilfully as I was able, and a little cordial, was to ſee if my yawm had the Graundee, or not. Finding it had, ſo, ſays I, to Youwarkee, you have brought me a legitimate heir to my dominions, whoſe title ſure can't be diſputed, being one of you. Though I ſpoke this with as much pleaſure, and in as endearing a way, as ever I ſpoke in my life, and quite innocently, the poor Youwarkee burſt into tears, to ſuch exceſs, there was no pacifying her. I aſked her the reaſon of her grief, begged and entreated her to let me know what diſturbed her; but all in vain; till ſeeing me in a violent paſſion, ſuch as I had never before appeared to be in, ſhe told me, ſhe was very ſorry I ſhould queſtion her fidelity to me. She ſurpriſed me in ſaying this, as I never had any ſuch apprehenſion. No, my deareſt wife,

* *Man child.*

ſays I, I never had any ſuch ſuſpicion as you charge me with, I can ſafely affirm; nor can I comprehend your meaning by imputing ſuch a thing to me. Oh! ſays ſhe, I am ſure you have no cauſe for it; but you ſaid, *the poor child was one of us*; as much as to intimate, that had it been your own, it would have been born, as you were, without the Graundee: Which thought I can't bear; and if you continue to think ſo, it muſt end me; therefore take away my life now, rather than let me live to ſee my further miſery.

I WAS heartily ſorry for what I had ſaid, when I ſaw the effects of it, though I did not imagine it could have been perverted to ſuch a contrary meaning. But conſidering her to be the faithfulleſt and moſt loving creature upon earth, and that true love can't bear any thing that touches upon, or can be applied (though with ever ſo forced a conſtruction) to an opprobrious or contemptuous meaning, I attributed her groundleſs reſentment, to her exceſs of fondneſs only for me; and falling upon the bed by her, and bathing her face in my tears, I aſſured her, the interpretation ſhe had put on my words was altogether foreign from the view they were ſpoken with; profeſſing to her, that I never had, nor ever could have, the leaſt cauſe of jealouſy. On my confirming this abſolute confidence in her virtue, by the ſtrongeſt aſſeverations, ſhe grew fully convinced of her error, and acknowledged ſhe had been too raſh in cenſuring me; and growing pleaſed at my freſh profeſſions of love to her, we preſently were reconciled, and became again very good friends.

WHEN Yourwarkee had gathered ſtrength again, ſhe proved an excellent nurſe to my Pedro, for that was the name I gave him; ſo that he ſoon grew a charming child, able to go in his twelfth month, and ſpoke in his

twentieth. This and two other lovely boys I had by her within three years, every one of which she brought up with the breast, and they thrived delicately.

I DON'T mention the little intervening occurrences which happened during this period; they consisting chiefly of the old rota, of fishing, watering, providing in the summer for the winter, and in managing my salt-work; which, altogether, kept me at full employment comfortably to maintain an encreasing family.

IN this time I had found out several new sorts of eatables. I had observed, as I said before, abundance of birds about the wood and lake, in the summer months. These, by firing at them two or three times on my first coming, I had almost caused to desert my dominions. But as I had, for the last two or three years, given no disturbance at all to them, they were now in as great plenty as ever: And I made great profit of them by the peace they enjoyed; and yet my table never wanted a supply, fresh in the summer, or salted and pickled in winter.

I TOOK notice it was about October these birds used to come, and most of the month of November they were busy in laying their eggs, which I used at that time to find in great plenty along the banks of the lake in the reeds, and made great collections of them; I used also to find a great many in the woods, amongst the shrubs and underwood. These furnished our table various ways; for, with my cream-cheese flower, and a little mixture of ramshorn juice, I had taught my wife to make excellent puddings of them; abundance of them also we eat boiled or fried alone, and often as sauce to our fish. As for the birds themselves, having long omitted to fire at them, I had an effectual means of ta-

king them otherwiſe, by nets which I ſet between the trees, and alſo very large pitfal-nets, with which I uſed to catch all ſorts, even from the ſize of a thruſh to that of a turkey. But as I ſhall ſay more of theſe when I come to ſpeak of my ward by and by, and of my poultry, I ſhall omit any further mention of them here.

YOU may perhaps wonder how I could keep an account of my time ſo preciſely, as to talk of the particular months. I will tell you. At my coming from America I was then exact; for we ſet ſail the fourteenth of November, and ſtruck the firſt or ſecond day of February. So far I kept perfect reckoning. But after that I was not ſo exact, though I kept it as well as my perplexity would admit even then, till the days ſhortening upon me prevented it.

HEREUPON I ſet about making a year for myſelf. I found the duration of the comparative darkneſs, or, what might with me be termed night, in the courſe of the twenty-four hours or day, gradually encreaſed for ſix months, after which it decreaſed reciprocally for an equal time; and the lighter part of the day took its turn, as in our parts of the world, only inverſely: So that, as the light's decreaſe became ſenſible about the middle of March, it was at the greateſt pitch the latter end of Auguſt, or beginning of September; and from thence, on the contrary, went on decreaſing to the cloſe of February, when I had the longeſt portion of light. Hereupon, dividing my year into two ſeaſons only, I began the winter half in March, and the ſummer half in September. Thus my winter was the ſpring and ſummer quarters of us in Europe, and my ſummer thoſe of our autumn and winter.

FROM my ſettling this matter, I kept little account

of days or weeks, but only reckoned my time by summer and winter: so that I am pretty right as to the revolutions of these; though the years, as to their notation, I kept no account of, nor do I know what year of the Lord it now is.

CHAP. XIX.

Wilkins's concern about clothing for Pedro, his eldest son; his discourse with his wife about the ship; her flight to it; his melancholy reflections till her return; an account of what she had done, and of what she brought; she clothes her children, and takes a second flight.

AS my boy Pedro grew up, though, as I said before, he had the Graundee, yet it was of less dimensions than it ought to have been, to be useful to him; so that it was visible he could never fly; for it would scarce meet before, whereas it ought to have reached from side to side both ways. This pleased my wife to the heart; for now she was sure, whatever I had done before, I could not suspect her. Be that as it will, the boy's Graundee not being a sufficient vestment for him, it became necessary he should be clothed.

I TURNED over my hoard, but could find nothing that would do; or, at least, that we knew how to fit him with. I had described my own country vest for lads to Youwarkee, and she formed a tolerable idea of it, but we had no tackle to alter any thing with. O my dear, says I, had I been but born with the Graundee, I need not be now racking my brains to get my child clothes. What do you mean by that? says she.

Why, says I, I would have flown to my ship, (for I had long before related to her all my sea adventures, till the vessel's coming to the magnetical rock) and have brought some such things from thence, as you, not wanting them in this country, can have no notion of. She seemed mighty inquisitive to understand how a ship was made; what it was most like to; how a person who never saw one might know it only by the description; and how one might get into it; with abundance of the like questions. She then enquired what sort of things those needles, and several other utensils, were, which I had at times been speaking of; and in what part of a ship they usually kept such articles. And I, to gratify her curiosity, as I perceived she took a pleasure in hearing me, answered all her questions to a scruple; not then conceiving the secret purpose of all this inquisitiveness.

About two days after this, having been out two or three hours in the morning to cut wood, at coming home I found Pedro crying, ready to break his heart, and his little brother Tommy hanging to him, and crawling about the floor after him; the youngest (pretty baby) was fast asleep upon one of the beast fish skins, in a corner of the room. I asked Pedro for his mother; but the poor infant had nothing further to say to the matter, than Mammy run away, I cry; Mammy run away, I cry. I admired where she was gone, never before missing her from our habitation. However, I waited patiently till bed-time, but no wife. I grew very uneasy then; yet, as my children were tired and sleepy, I thought I had best go to bed with them, and make quiet. So, giving all three their suppers, we lay down together. They slept; but my mind was too full to permit the closure of my eyes. A thousand different chimeras swam in my imagination relating to my wife.

One while I fancied her carried away by her kinsfolks; then, that she was gone of her own accord to make peace with her father. But that thought would not fix, being put aside by her constant tenderness to her children, and regard to me; whom I was sure she would not have left without notice. But, alas! says I, she may even now be near me, but taken so ill she can't get home; or, she may have died suddenly in the wood. I lay tumbling and tossing in great anxiety, not able to find out any excuseable occasion she could have of so long absence. And then, thinks I, if she should either be dead, or have quite left me, which will be of equally bad consequence to me, what can I do with three poor helpless infants. If they were a little more grown up, they might be helpful to me, and to each other; but at their age, how shall I ever rear them, without the tenderness of a mother; and to see them pine away before my face, and not know how to help them, will distract me.

FINDING I could neither sleep, or lye still, I rose, intending to search all the woods about, and call to her, that if any accident had prevented sight of her, she might at least hear me. But upon opening the door, and just stepping out, how agreeably was I surprised to meet her coming in, with something on her arm. My dear Youwarkee, says I, where have you been? What has befallen you to keep you out so long? The poor children have been at their wits end to find you; and I, my dear, have been unconsolable; and was now, almost distracted, coming in search of you.

Youwarkee looked very blank, to think what concern she had given me and the children. My dearest Peter, says she, (kissing me) pray forgive the only thing I have ever done to offend you, and the last cause you shall e-

ver have, by my good will, to complain of me; but, walk within doors, and I will give you a farther account of my abſence. Don't you remember what delight I took the other day to hear you talk of your ſhip? Yes, ſays I, you did ſo; but what of that? Nay, pray, ſays ſhe, forgive me, for I have been to ſee it. That's impoſſible, ſays I: And truly this was the firſt time I ever thought ſhe went about to deceive me. I do aſſure you, ſays ſhe, I have, and a wonderful thing it is; but if you diſtruſt me, and what I ſay, I have brought proof of it; ſtep out with me to the verge of the wood, and ſatisfy yourſelf. But pray, ſays I, who preſented you with this upon your arm? I vow, ſays ſhe, I had forgot this; yes, this will, I believe, confirm to you what I have ſaid. I turned it over and over; and looking wiſhfully upon her, ſays I, this waiſtcoat, indeed, is the very fellow to one that lay in the captain's locker, in the cabbin. Say not the very fellow, ſays ſhe, but rather ſay the very ſame; for I'll aſſure you it is ſo; and had you been with me, we might have got ſo many things for ourſelves and the children, we ſhould never have wanted more, though we lived theſe hundred years; but as it is, I have left ſomething without the wood for you to bring up. When we had had out talk out, ſhe hearing the children ſtir, took them up, and was going, as ſhe always did, to get their breakfaſts. Hold, ſays I, this journey muſt have fatigued you too much already, lay yourſelf to reſt, and leave every thing elſe to me. My dear, ſays ſhe, you ſeem to think this flight tirefome, but you are miſtaken; I am more weary with walking to the lake and back again, than with all the reſt. Oh, ſays ſhe, if you had but the Graundee, flying would reſt you after the greateſt labour; for the parts which are moved with exerciſe on the earth, are all at reſt in flight; as, on the contrary, the parts uſed in flight are when on earthly travel

The whole trouble of flight is in mounting from the plain ground; but when once you are upon the Graundee, at a proper height, all the reſt is play, a mere trifle; you need only think of your way, and incline to it, your Graundee directs you as readily as your feet obey you on the ground, without thinking of every ſtep you take: It does not require labour, as your boat does, to keep you a going.

AFTER we had compoſed ourſelves, we walked to the verge of the wood, to ſee what cargo my wife had brought from the ſhip. I was aſtoniſhed at the bulk of it; and ſeeing by the outſide it conſiſted of clothes, I took it with much ado upon my ſhoulders, and carried it home. But, upon opening it, I found far more treaſure than I could have imagined; for there was a hammer, a great many ſpikes and nails, three ſpoons, about five plates of pewter, four knives and a fork, a ſmall China punch bowl, two chocolate cups, a paper of needles, and ſeveral of pins, a parcel of coarſe thread, a pair of ſhoes, and abundance of ſuch other things as ſhe had heard me wiſh for and deſcribe; beſides as much linen and woollen, of one ſort or another, as made a good package for all the other things; with a great tin porridge pot, of about two gallons, tied to the outſide; and all theſe as nicely ſtowed, as if ſhe had been bred a packer.

WHEN I had viewed the bundle, and poized the weight, how was it poſſible, my dear Youwarkee, ſaid I, for you to bring all this? You could never carry them in your hands. No, no, replied ſhe, I carried them on my back. Is it poſſible, ſays I, for your Graundee to bear yourſelf, and all this weight too, in the air, and to ſuch an height as the top of theſe rocks? You will always, replies ſhe, make the height a part of your diffi-

culty in flying; but you are deceived; for as the firſt ſtroke (I have heard you ſay often) in fighting, is half the battle, ſo it is in flying; get but once fairly on the wind, nothing can hurt you afterwards. My method, let me tell you, was this; I climed to the higheſt part of the ſhip, where I could ſtand clear, having firſt put up my burthen, which you have there; and then getting that on my back, near my ſhoulders, I took the two cords you ſee hang looſe to it in my two hands, and extending my Graundee, leaped off, flatwiſe, with my face towards the water, when inſtantly playing two or three good ſtrokes with my Graundee, I was out of danger. Now, if I had found the bundle too heavy to make my firſt ſtrokes with, I ſhould directly have turned on my back, dropped my bundle, and floated in my Graundee to the ſhip again, as you once ſaw me float on the lake. Says I, you muſt have flown a prodigious diſtance to the ſhip, for I was ſeveral days ſailing, I believe three weeks, from my ſhip, before I reached the gulph; and after that, could be little leſs than five weeks, (as I accounted for it) and at a great rate of ſailing too, under the rock, before I reached the lake; ſo that the ſhip muſt be a monſtrous way off. No, no, ſays ſhe, your ſhip lies but over yon cliff, that riſes as it were with two points; and as to the rock itſelf, it is not broader than our lake is long. But what made you ſo tedious in your paſſage was, many of the windings and turnings in the cavern returning into themſelves again; ſo that you might have gone round and round till this time, if the tide had not luckily ſtruck you into the direct paſſage. This, ſays ſhe, I have heard from ſome of my countrymen, who have flown up it, but could never get quite through.

I WISH with all my heart, ſays I, fortune had brought me firſt to light in this country; or (but for your ſake I

could almoſt ſay) had never brought me into it at all; for, to be a creature of the leaſt ſignificancy of the whole race about one, is a melancholy circumſtance. Fear not, ſays ſhe, my love, for you have a wife will hazard all for you, though you are reſtrained; and as my inclinations and affections are ſo much yours, that I need but know your deſires to execute them, as far as my power extends, ſurely you, who can act by another, may be content to forego the trouble of your own performance. I perceive, indeed, continued ſhe, you want mightily to go to your ſhip, and are more uneaſy, now you know it is ſafe, than you was before; but that being paſt my ſkill to aſſiſt you in, if you will command your deputy to go backwards and forwards in your ſtead, I am ready to obey you.

THUS ended our converſation about the ſhip for that time. But it left not my mind ſo ſoon; for a ſtronger hankering after it purſued me now than ever, ſince my wife's flight, but to no purpoſe.

WE ſat us down, and ſorted out our cargo piece by piece; and having found ſeveral things proper for the children, my wife longed to enter upon ſome piece of work towards clothing Pedro, in the manner ſhe had heard me talk of; and laid hard at me to ſhew her the uſe of the needles, thread, and other things ſhe had brought. Indeed, I muſt ſay, ſhe proved very tractable; and, from the little inſtruction I was able to give her, ſoon outwrought my knowledge: For I could only ſhew her that the thread went through the needle, and both through the cloth to hold it together; but for any thing elſe I was as ignorant as ſhe. In much leſs time than I could have imagined, ſhe had clothed my ſon Pedro, and had made a ſort of mantle for the youngeſt. But now, ſeeing us ſo ſmart, (for I took upon me

to wear the green waiſtcoat ſhe had brought under my dirty jacket) ſhe began to be aſhamed of herſelf, as ſhe ſaid, in our fine company; and afterwards (as I ſhall ſoon acquaint you) got into our faſhion.

SEEING the advantages of her flight to the ſhip, and that ſo many conveniencies aroſe from it, ſhe was frequently at me to let her go again. I ſhould as much have wiſhed for another return of goods as ſhe, but I could by no means think of parting with my factor; for I knew her eagerneſs to pleaſe me, and that ſhe would ſtick at nothing to perform it; and, thinks I, ſhould any accident happen to her, by over-loading, or otherwiſe, and I ſhould loſe her, all the other commodities of the whole world put together would not compenſate her loſs. But as ſhe ſo earneſtly deſired it, and aſſured me ſhe would run no hazards, I was prevailed on at length, by her inceſſant importunities, to let her go; though under certain reſtrictions, which ſhe promiſed me to comply with. At firſt I inſiſted upon it, that ſhe ſhould take a tour quite round the rock, ſetting out the ſame way I had laſt gone with my boat, and, if poſſible, find out the gulph, which I told her ſhe could not miſtake, by reaſon of the noiſe the fall of the water made; and deſired her to remark the place, ſo as I might know, within ſide, where it was without. And then I told her ſhe might review and ſearch every hole in the ſhip as ſhe pleaſed, and if there were any ſmall things ſhe had a mind to bring from it, ſhe was welcome, provided the bundle ſhe ſhould make up was not above a fourth part either of the bulk or weight of the laſt. All which ſhe having engaged punctually to obſerve, ſhe bid me not expect her till I ſaw her, and ſhe would return as ſoon as poſſible. I then went with her to the confines of the wood, (for I told her her

desired to see her mount) and she, after we had embraced, bidding me to stand behind her, took her flight.

CHAP. XX.

The author observes her flight; a description of a Glumm in the Graundee; she finds out the gulph, not far from the ship; brings home more goods; makes her a gown by her husband's instruction.

I HAD, ever since our marriage, been desirous of seeing Youwarkee fly, but this was the first opportunity I had of it; and indeed the sight was worthy of all the attention I paid it; for I desired her slowly to put herself in proper order for it, that I might make my observation the more accurately; and shall now give you an account of the whole apparatus, though several parts of the description were taken from subsequent views; for it would have been impossible to have made just remarks of every thing at that once, especially as I only viewed her back parts then.

I TOLD you before, I had seen her Graundee open, and quite extended, as low as her middle; but that being in the grotto, by lamp light, I could not take so just a survey as now, when the sort of light we ever had was at the brightest.

SHE first threw up two long branches, or ribs, of the whalebone, as I called it before, (and, indeed, for several of its properties, as toughness, elasticity, and pliableness, nothing I have ever seen can so justly be compared to it) which were jointed behind to the upper

bone of the ſpine, and which, when not extended, lye bent over the ſhoulders, on each ſide of the neck forwards; from whence, by nearer and nearer approaches, they juſt meet at the lower rim of the belly in a ſort of point; but when extended, they ſtand their whole length above the ſhoulders, not perpendicularly, but ſpreading outwards, with a web of the ſofteſt and moſt pliable and ſpringy membrane that can be imagined, in the interſpace between them, reaching from their root or joint on the back, up above the hinder part of the head, and near half way their own length; but, when cloſed, the membrane falls down in the middle, upon the neck, like an handkerchief. There are alſo two other ribs, riſing as it were from the ſame root, which, when open, run horizontally, but not ſo long as the others. Theſe are filled up, in the interſpace between them and the upper ones, with the ſame membrane; and on the lower ſide of this is alſo a deep flap of the membrane, ſo that the arms can be either above or below it in flight; and are always above it when cloſed. This laſt rib, when ſhut, flaps under the upper one, and alſo falls down with it before to the waiſt, but is not joined to the ribs below. Along the whole ſpine-bone runs a ſtrong flat broad griſley cartilage, to which are joined ſeveral other of theſe ribs; all which open horizontally, and are filled in the interſpaces with the above membrane, and are jointed to the ribs of the perſon juſt where the plane of the back begins to turn towards the breaſt and belly; and, when ſhut, wrap the body round to the joints on the contrary ſide, folding neatly one ſide over the other. At the lower ſpine are two more ribs, extended horizontally when open, jointed again to the hips, and long enough to meet the joint on the contrary ſide croſs the belly; and from the hip-joint, which is on the outermoſt edge of the hip-bone, runs a pliable cartilage quite down the outſide of

the thigh and leg to the ancle; from which there branch out divers other ribs, horizontally alſo when open, but when cloſed they encompaſs the whole thigh and leg, rolling inwards croſs the back of the leg and thigh, till they reach and juſt cover the cartilage. The interſpaces of theſe are alſo filled up with the ſame membrane. From the two ribs which join to the lower ſpine-bone there hangs down a ſort of ſhort apron, very full of plaits, from hip-joint to hip-joint, and reaches below the buttocks, half way or more to the hams. This has alſo ſeveral ſmall limber ribs in it. Juſt upon the lower ſpine-joint, and above the apron, as I call it, there are two other long branches, which, when cloſe, extend upon the back, from the point they join at below to the ſhoulders, where each rib has a claſper, which, reaching over the ſhoulders, juſt under the fold of the uppermoſt branch or ribs, hold up the two ribs flat to the back like a V; the interſpaces of which are alſo filled up with the aforeſaid membrane. This laſt piece, in flight, falls down almoſt to the ancles; where the two claſpers, lapping under each leg, within ſide, hold it very faſt; and then alſo the ſhort apron is drawn up, by the ſtrength of the ribs in it, between the thighs forward, and covers the pudenda and groin, as far as the rim of the belly. The whole arms are covered alſo from the ſhoulders to the wriſt with the ſame delicate membrane, faſtened to ribs of proportionable dimenſions, and jointed to a cartilage on the outſide, in the ſame manner as on the legs.

It is very ſurpriſing to feel the difference of theſe ribs when open, and when cloſed; for cloſed, they are as pliable as the fineſt whalebone, or more ſo; but, when extended, are as ſtrong and ſtiff as a bone. They are tapering from the roots, and are broader or narrower as beſt ſuits the places they occupy, and the

ſtreſs they are put to, up to their points; which are almoſt as ſmall as a hair. The membrane between them is the moſt elaſtic thing I ever met with; occupying no more ſpace, when the ribs are cloſed, than juſt from rib to rib, as flat and ſmooth as poſſible; but, when extended in ſome poſtures, will dilate itſelf ſurpriſingly.

As ſoon as my wife had expanded the whole Graundee, being upon plain ground, ſhe ſtooped forward, moving with a heavy rigling motion at firſt, which put me into ſome pain for her; but after a few ſtrokes, beginning to riſe a little, ſhe cut through the air like lightning, and was ſoon over the edge of the rock, and out of my ſight.

It is the moſt amazing thing in the world to obſerve the large expanſion of this Graundee, when open; and when cloſed, (as it all is in a moment, upon the party's deſcent) to ſee it ſit ſo cloſe and compact to the body, as no tailor can come up to it; and then the ſeveral ribs lye ſo juſtly diſpoſed in the ſeveral parts, that inſtead of being, as one would imagine, a diſadvantage to the ſhape, they make the body and limbs look extremely elegant; and, by the different adjuſtment of their lines on the body and limbs, the whole, to my fancy, ſomewhat reſembles the dreſs of the old Roman warriors in their buſkins; and, to appearance, ſeems much more noble than any factitious garb I ever ſaw, or can frame a notion of to myſelf.

Though theſe people, in height, ſhape, and limb, very much reſemble the Europeans, there is yet this difference, that their bodies are rather broader and flatter, and their limbs, though as long and well ſhaped, are ſeldom ſo thick as ours: And this I obſerved generally in all I ſaw of them, during a long time among

them afterwards; but their ſkin, for beauty and fairneſs, exceeds ours very much.

My wife having now taken her ſecond flight, I went home, and never left my children till her return. This was three days after our parting. I was in bed with my little ones, when ſhe knocked at the door. I ſoon let her in, and we received each other with a glowing welcome. The news ſhe brought me was very agreeable. She told me, ſhe firſt went and pryed into every nook in the ſhip, where ſhe had ſeen ſuch things, could we get at them, as would make us very happy. Then ſhe ſet out the way I told her to go, in order to find the gulph. She was much afraid ſhe ſhould not have diſcovered it, though ſhe flew very ſlow that ſhe might be ſure to hear the water-fall, and not over-ſhoot it. It was long ere ſhe came at it; but, when ſhe did, ſhe perceived ſhe might have ſpared moſt of her trouble, had ſhe ſet out the other way; for, after ſhe had flown almoſt round the iſland, and not before, ſhe began to hear the fall, and, upon coming up to it, found it to be not above ſix minutes flight from the ſhip. She ſaid, the entrance was very narrow, and, ſhe thought, lower than I repreſented it; for ſhe could ſcarce diſcern any ſpace between the ſurface of the water and the arch-way of the rock. I told her, that might happen from the riſe or fall of the ſea itſelf. But I was glad to hear the ſhip was no farther from the gulph; for my head was never free from the thoughts of my ſhip and cargo. She then told me, ſhe had left a ſmall bundle for me without the wood, and went to look after her children. I brought up the bundle; and, though it was not near ſo large as the other, I found ſeveral uſeful things in it, wrapped up in four or five yards of dark blue woollen cloth, which I knew no name for, but which was thin and light, and about a yard wide. I aſked her

where she met with this stuff? She answered, where there was more of it, under a thing like our bed, in a cloth like our sheet, which she cut open, and took it out of. Well, says I, and what will you do with this? Why, I will make me a coat like yours, says she, for I don't like to look different from my dear husband and children. No, Yowarkee, replied I, you must not do so; if you make such a jacket as mine, there will be no distinction between Glumm and Gawry *; the Gawren Praave †, in my country, would not, on any account, go dressed like a Glum; for they wear a fine flowing garment, called a gown, that sits tight about the waist, and hangs down from thence in folds, like your Barras ‡, almost to the ground, so that you can hardly discern their feet, and no other part of their body but their hands and face, and about as much of their necks and breasts as you shew in your Graundee.

YOUWARKEE seemed highly delighted with this new fancied dress, and worked day and night at it against the cold weather. Whilst she employed herself thus, I was busied in providing my winter stores; which I was forced to do alone now, herself and children taking up all my wife's time. About a fortnight after she had began mantuamaking, she presented herself to me one day, as I came from work, in her new gown; and truly, considering the scanty description I had given her of such a garment, it appeared a good comely dress. Though it had not one plait about the body, it sat very tight thereto, and yet hung down full enough for a countess; for she would have put it all in, all the stuff she had, had there been as much more of it. I could see no opening before, so asked her how she got it

* *Man and woman.* † *Modest women.*
‡ *The back flap of the Graundee.*

on? She told me, ſhe laid along on the ground, and crept through the plaits at the bottom, and ſewed the body round her, after ſhe had got her hands and arms through the ſleeves. I wondered at her contrivance, and, ſmiling, ſhewed her how ſhe ſhould put it on, and alſo how to pin it before; and after ſhe had done that, and I had turned up about half a yard of ſleeve, which then hung down to her fingers ends, I kiſſed her, and called her my country woman; of which, and her new gown, ſhe was very proud for a long time.

CHAP. XXI.

The author gets a breed of poultry, and by what means; builds them an houſe; how he managed to keep them in winter.

ONE day as I was traverſing the woods to view my bird-traps, looking into the underwood, among the great trees on my right hand, I ſaw a wood-hen (a bird I uſed to call ſo, from its reſemblance in make to our Engliſh poultry) come out of a little thicket. I know not whether my ruſtling, or what, had diſturbed it, but I let her paſs, and ſhe ran away before me. When ſhe was fairly out of ſight, I ſtepped up, and found ſhe had a neſt and ſixteen eggs there. I exactly marked the place; and taking away one of the eggs, I broke it, at ſome diſtance from the neſt, to ſee how forward they were; and I had no ſooner broke the ſhell, but out came a young chicken. I then looked into the neſt again, and taking up more of the eggs, I found them all juſt ſplintered in the ſhell, and ready for hatching. I had immediately a deſire to ſave them, and bring

them up tame; but I was afraid if I took them away before they were hatched, and a little ſtrengthened under the hen, they would all die, ſo I let them remain till next day. In the mean while I prepared ſome ſmall netting, of ſuch a proper ſize, as I conceived would do; and with this I contrived, by faſtening it to ſtakes which I fixed in the ground, to ſurround the neſt, and me on the outſide of it. All the while I was doing this the hen did not ſtir; ſo that I thought ſhe had either been abſent when I came, or had hatched and gone off with the young ones. As to her being gone, I was under no concern, for I had no deſign to catch her, but only to confine the chickens within my net, if they were hatched. But however I went nearer, and, peeping in, found ſhe ſat ſtill, ſqueezing herſelf as flat to the ground as ſhe could. I was in twenty minds whether to take her firſt, and then catch the chickens, or to let her go off, and then clap upon them; but as I propoſed to let her go, I thought, if ſhe would ſit ſtill till I had got the chickens, that would be the beſt way. So I ſoftly kneeled down before her, and ſliding my hand under her, I gently drew it out, and put them in a bag I had in my left hand. I then dipped again and again, taking two every turn. But going a fourth time, as I was bringing out my prize, the hen jumped up, flew out, and made ſuch a noiſe, that though I, the minute before, ſaw ſix or ſeven more chicks in a lump, where ſhe had ſat, and kept my eye upon them, yet, before I could put the laſt two I had got into my bag, theſe were all gone, and in three hours ſearch I could not find one of them, though I was ſure they could not paſs my net, and muſt be within the compaſs of a ſmall room, my toils incloſing no more. After tiring myſelf with looking for them, I marched home with thoſe eight I had got.

I TOLD Youwarkee what I had done, and how I intended to manage the little brood, and, if I could, to bring them up tame. We kept them ſome days very warm by the fire, and fed them often, as I had ſeen my mother do with her early chickens; and in a fortnight's time they were as ſtout and familiar as common poultry. We kept them a long while in the houſe; and when I fed them I always uſed them to a particular whiſtle, which I alſo taught my wife, that they might know both us and their feeding-time; and in a very ſhort while they would come running upon the uſual ſound, like barn-door fowls, to the name of Biddy.

THERE happened in this brood to be five hens and three cocks; and they were now ſo tame, that, having cut their wings, I let them out, when the weather favoured, at my door, where they would pick about in the wood, and get beſt part of their ſubſiſtence; and having uſed them to rooſt in a corner of my antichamber, they all came in very regularly at night, and took their places. My hens, at the uſual ſeaſon, laid me abundance of eggs, and hatched me a brood or two each of chickens; ſo that now I was at a loſs to know what to do with them, they were become ſo numerous. The antichamber was no longer a proper receptacle of ſuch a flock, and therefore I built a little houſe, at a ſmall diſtance from my own, on purpoſe for their reception and entertainment. I had by this time cleared a ſpot of ground on one ſide of my grotto, by burning up the timber and underwood which had covered it; this I incloſed, and within that incloſure I raiſed my aviary; and my poultry thrived well there, ſeemed to like their habitation, and grew very fat.

MY wife and I took much delight in viſiting and feeding them, and it was a fine diverſion alſo to my boys;

but at the end of ſummer, when all the other birds took their annual flight, away went every one of my new raiſed brood with them, and one of my old cocks; the reſt of the old ſet remaining very quiet with me all the winter. The next ſummer, when my chicks of that year grew up a little, I cut their wings, and by that means preſerved all but one; which I ſuppoſe was either not cut ſo cloſe as the reſt, or his wings had grown again. From this time I found by long experience, that not two, out of an hundred that had once wintered with me, would ever go away, though I did not cut their wings; but all of the ſame ſeaſon would certainly go off with the wild ones, if they could any ways make a ſhift to fly. I afterwards got a breed of black necks; which was a name I gave them from the peculiar blackneſs of their necks, let the reſt of their bodies be of what colour they would, as they were indeed of all colours. Theſe birds were as big, or bigger, than a turkey, of a delicious flavour, and were bred from turkey eggs, hatched under my own wood-hens, in great plenty. I was forced to clip theſe, as I did the other young fowl, to keep them; and at length they grew very tame, and would return every night during the dark ſeaſon. The greateſt difficulty now was, to get meat for all theſe animals in the winter, when they would ſit in the rooſt two days together, if I did not call and feed them; which I was ſometimes forced to do by lamp-light, or they would have ſtarved in cloudy weather. But I overcame that want of food by an accidental diſcovery; for I obſerved my black-necks in the woods jump many times together at a ſort of little round heads or pods, very dry, which hung plentifully upon a ſhrub that grew in great abundance there. I cut ſeveral of theſe heads, and carrying them home with me, broke them, and took out a ſpoonful or more from each head of ſmall yellow ſeeds; which, gi-

ving to my poultry, and finding they greedily devoured them, I ſoon laid in a ſtock for twice my number of mouths, ſo that they never after wanted. I tried ſeveral times to raiſe a breed of water fowl, by hatching their eggs under my hens; but not one in ten of the ſorts, when hatched, were fit to eat; and thoſe that were would never live and thrive with me, but got away to the lake, having no ſort of water nearer me; ſo I dropped my deſign of water fowl as impracticable. But by breeding and feeding my land fowl ſo conſtantly in my farm-yard, I never wanted of that ſort at my table, where we eat abundance of them; for my whole ſide of the lake, in a few years, was like a farm-yard, ſo full of poultry, that I never knew my ſtock; and upon the uſual whiſtle they would flock round me from all quarters. I had every thing now but cattle, not only for the ſupport, but convenience and pleaſure of life; and ſo happily ſhould I have fared here, if I had had but a cow and bull, a ram and ſheep, that I would not have changed my dominions for the crown of England.

CHAP. XXII.

Reflections on mankind; the author wants to be with his ship; projects going, but perceives it impracticable; Youwarkee offers her service, and goes; an account of her transactions on board; remarks on her sagacity; she dispatches several chests of goods through the gulph to the lake; an account of a danger she escaped; the author has a fit of sickness.

STRANGE is the temper of mankind, who, the more they enjoy, the more they covet. Before I received any return from my ship, I rested tolerably easy, and but seldom thought upon what I had left behind me in her; thinking myself happy in what I had, and completely so, since my union with my dear wife. But after I had got what I could never have expected, I grew more and more perplexed for want of the rest; and thought I should never enjoy true happiness, while even a plank of the ship remained. My head, be I where I would, or at what I would, was ever on board. I wished for her in the lake, and could I but have got her thither, I thought I should be an emperor. And though I wanted for nothing to maintain life, and had so good a wife and five children I was very fond of, yet the one thing I had not, reduced the comfort of all the rest to a scanty pattern, even so low as to destroy my whole peace. I was even mad enough to think of venturing up the cavern again, but was restrained from the attempt by the certain impracticableness of it. Then I thought Youwarkee should make another trip to the ship; But what can she bring from it, says I to myself, in respect of what must be left behind? Her whole life

won't ſuffice to clear it in, at the rate ſhe can fetch the loading hither, in parcels. At laſt a project ſtarted; that as there were ſo many cheſts on board, Youwarkee ſhould fill ſome of them, and ſend them through the gulph, to take their chance for the lake. This, at firſt ſight, ſeemed feaſable; but then I conſidered how they could be got from the ſhip to the gulph; and, again, that they would never keep out the water, and if they filled with a lading in them, they would ſink; or, if this did not happen, they might be daſhed to pieces againſt the craggs in the cavern. Theſe apprehenſions ſtopped me again; till, unwilling to quit the thought, true, ſays I, this may happen to ſome, but if I get but one in five, it is better than nothing. Thus I turned and wound the affair in my mind; but objections ſtill ſtarted, too obſtinate to be conquered.

In the height of my ſoliloquy, in comes Youwarkee, and ſeeing my dejected look, would needs know the meaning of it. I told her plainly, that I could get no reſt from day to day, ever ſince ſhe firſt went to the ſhip, to think ſuch a number of good things lay there to be a prey to the ſea, as the ſhip waſted, when they might be of ſuch infinite ſervice here; and that ſince her laſt flight I had ſuffered the more, when I thought how near the gulph was to the ſhip; ſo that could I but get thither myſelf with my boat, I would contrive to pack up the goods in the cheſts that were on board, and, carrying them in the boat, drop them near the draft of the water, which of itſelf would ſuck them under the rock down the gulph; and when they were paſſed through the cavern, I might take them up in the lake. Well, ſays ſhe, Peter, and why can't I do this for you? No, ſays I, even this has its objections. Then I told her what I feared of their taking water, or daſhing againſt the rock, and twenty other ways of

fruſtrating my views; but, above all, ſays I, how can you get ſuch large and weighty things to the gulph without a boat? There is another impoſſibility! it won't do.

YOUWARKEE eyed me attentively. Prithee, my dear Peter, ſays ſhe, ſet your heart at reſt about that. I can only try; if no good is to be done, you ſhall ſoon know it, and muſt reſt contented under the diſappointment. I told her, if I was there, I could take all the things out of a cheſt, and then melt ſome pitch, and pour into every crack, to keep out the water when they were ſet a-float. Pitch, ſays ſhe, what's that? Why, ſays I, that is a naſty, hard, black, ſticking thing, that ſtands in tubs in the ſhip; and which, being put over the fire in any thing to melt, will grow liquid, and when it is cold be hard again; and will reſiſt the water and keep it out. Says ſhe, how can I put this pitch within the ſide of the cheſt lid, when I have tied it up? It is to no manner of purpoſe, ſays I; to talk of it, ſo there's an end of it. But, ſays ſhe, ſuppoſe yourſelf there, what things would you bring firſt? I then entered into a long detail of particulars, ſaying, I would have this and that, and ſo on, till I had ſcarce left out a thing I either knew of or could ſuppoſe to be in the ſhip; and for fear I had not mentioned all, ſays I, at laſt, if I was there, I believe I ſhould leave but little portable behind me.

So, ſo, my dear, ſays Youwarkee, you would roll in riches, I find, but you have mentioned never a new gown for me. Why, ay, ſays I, I would have that too. But how would you melt the the pitch? ſays ſhe. O, ſays I, there is a tinder-box and matches in a room below, upon the ſide of the fire hearth; and then I let her ſee one I had brought with me, and ſhewed her

the uſe of the flint and ſteel. Well, my dear, ſays ſhe, will you once more truſt me? I told her, her going would be of little more uſe than to get a ſecond gown, or ſome ſuch things; but if ſhe was deſirous, I would let her make another flight, on her promiſe to be back as ſoon as poſſible.

In the evening ſhe ſet out, and ſtayed two days, and till the night of the third. I would here obſerve, that though it was much lighter and brighter on the outſide of the rock, where the ſhip lay, than with us at Graundevolet, yet, having always her ſpectacles with her, I heard no more complaint of the glare of light ſhe uſed to be ſo much afraid of. Indeed, ſhe always avoided the fire and lamp at home as much as ſhe could, becauſe ſhe generally took off her ſpectacles within doors; but when at any time ſhe had them on, ſhe could bear both well enough.

Upon her return again, ſhe told me ſhe had ſhipped ſome goods to ſea for me, which ſhe hoped would arrive ſafe, (for by this time ſhe had had my ſeafaring terms ſo often over, ſhe could apply them very properly,) and that they were in ſix cheſts, which ſhe had pitched after my directions. Ay, ſays I, you have pitched them into the ſea, perhaps, but after my directions, I am ſatisfied, was beyond your ability. You Glumms, ſays ſhe, think us Gawrys very ignorant, but I'll ſatisfy you we are not ſo dull of apprehenſion as you would make us. Did not you ſhow me one day how your boat was tarred and caulked, as you call it? I did, ſays I, what then? I'll tell you, ſays ſhe. When I had emptied the firſt cheſt, and ſet it properly, I looked about for your pitch, which at laſt I found by its ſticking to my fingers; I then put a good piece into a ſort of a little kettle, with a long handle, that lay upon the

pitch.—O, the pitch ladle, says I.—I know not what you call it, says she, but then I made a fire, as you told me, and melted that stuff; afterwards turning up the chest sideways, and then endways, I poured it into it, and let it settle in the cracks, and, with an old stocking, such as your's, dipped into the pitch, I rubbed every place where the boards joined.' I then set the chest on the side of the ship, and when the pitch was cold and hardened in it, filled it top full of things. But when I had done thus, and shut the lid, I found that would not come so close, but I could get the blade of a knife through any where between it and the chest; whereupon I cut some long slips of the cloth I was packing up, and fitting them all round the edge of the chest, I dipped them into the pitch, and laid them on hot; and where one slip would not do, I put two; and shutting the lid down close upon them, I nailed it, as I had seen you do some things, quite round; then tying a rope to the handle, I tipped the chest into the sea, holding the rope; I watched it some time, and seeing it swim well, I took flight with the rope in my hand, and drew the chest after me to the gulph, when, letting go the rope, away it went. I served five more in the same manner. And now, my dearest, I am here to tell you, I hope you will be able to see at least some of them, one time or other, in the lake.

I ADMIRED in all this at the sagacity of the Gawrys. Alas! thinks I, what narrow hearted creatures are mankind? Did not I heretofore look upon the poor blacks in Africa as little better than beasts, till my friend Glandlipze convinced me, by disabling the crocodile, the passage of the river, and several other atchievements, that my own excellencies might have perished in a desart, without his genius; and now what could I, or almost any of us master-pieces of the creation, (as we

think ourſelves) and Heaven's peculiar favourites, have done in this preſent caſe, that has been omitted by this woman, (for I may juſtly ſtile her ſo in an eminent degree) and that in a way to which ſhe was bred an utter ſtranger.

After what I had heard from Youwarkee, I grew much more cheerful; which ſhe (poor creature) was remarkably pleaſed with. She went with me conſtantly once, and ſometimes twice, a-day, for ſeveral days together, to ſee what ſucceſs at the lake; till at length ſhe grew very impatient for fear, as ſhe afterwards told me, I ſhould either think ſhe had not done what ſhe ſaid, or had done it in an ineffectual manner. But one day, walking by the lake, I thought I ſaw ſomething floating in the water, at a very great diſtance. Youwarkee, ſays I, I ſpy a ſail; then running to my boat, and taking her in, away we went, plying my oars with all my might, for I longed to ſee what it was. At nearer view I perceived it to be one of my wife's fleet. But what added to my ſatisfaction was, to ſee Youwarkee ſo pleaſed, for ſhe could ſcarcely contain herſelf.

When we came cloſe to it, up ſhe ſtarted; now, my dear Peter, ſays ſhe, torment yourſelf no more about your goods on board, for if this will do, all ſhall be your own. She then lent me a hand to take it in; but we had both work enough to compaſs it, the wood had ſoaked in ſo much water. We then made the beſt of our way homewards to my wet dock; when, juſt as we had landed our treaſure, we ſaw two more boxes coming down the ſtream both together; whereupon we launched again, and brought them in one by one; for I did not care to truſt them both on one bottom, my boat being in years, and grown ſomewhat crazy.

WE had now made a good day's work of it; ſo, mooring the boat, we went home, intending to be out next morning early with the cart, to convey our imports to the grotto.

AFTER ſupper, Youwarkee, looking very earneſtly at me, with tears juſt glittering in her eyes, broke out in theſe words, What ſhould you have thought, Peter, to have ſeen me come ſailing, drowned, through the cavern, tied to one of your cheſts? Heaven forbid ſuch a thought! my charmer, ſays I; but, as you know I muſt have been rendered the moſt miſerable of all living creatures by ſuch a ſight, or any thing elſe that would deprive me of you, pray tell me how you could poſſibly have ſuch a thought in your head? She ſaw ſhe had raiſed my concern, and was very ſorry for what ſhe had ſaid. Nothing, nothing, ſays ſhe, my dear; it was only a fancy juſt come into my head. My dear Youwee, ſays I, you muſt let me know what you mean; I am in great pain till you explain yourſelf; for I am ſure there is ſomething more in what you ſay than fancy; therefore, pray, if you love me, keep me on the rack no longer. Ah! Peter, ſays ſhe, there was but a ſpan between me and death, not many days ago; and when I ſaw the line of the laſt cheſt we took up juſt now, it gave me ſo much horror, I could ſcarce keep upon my feet. My dear Youwee proceed, ſays I, for I can't bear my torment till I have heard the worſt. Why, Peter, ſays ſhe, now the danger is over, I ſhall tell you my eſcape with as much pleaſure as I gueſs you will take in hearing of it. You muſt know, my life, ſays ſhe, that having caſt that cheſt into the ſea, as I was tugging it along by that very line, it being one of the heavieſt, and moving but ſlowly, I twiſted the ſtring ſeveral times round my hand, one fold upon another, the eaſier to tow it; when, drawing it rather too quick

into the eddy, it pulled ſo hard againſt me towards the gulph, and ſo quick, that I could no way looſen or diſengage the cord from my fingers, but was dragged thereby to the very rock, againſt which the cheſt ſtuck violently. My laſt thought, as I ſuppoſed it, was of you, my dear, (on which ſhe claſped me round the neck, in ſenſe of her paſt agony,) when, taking myſelf for loſt, I forbore further reſiſtance; at which inſtant the line, ſlackening by the rebound of the cheſt, fell from my hand of itſelf; and the cheſt, returning to the rock, went down the current. I took a turn or two round on my Graunden, to recollect my paſt danger, and went back to the ſhip, fully reſolved to avoid the like ſnare for the future. Indeed, I did not eaſily recover my ſpirits, and was ſo terrified with the thought, that I had half a mind to have left the two remaining cheſts behind me; but, as danger overcome gives freſh reſolution, I again ſet to work, and diſcharged them alſo down the gulph, as I hope you will ſee in good time.

My heart bled within me all the while ſhe ſpoke; and I even felt ten times more than ſhe could have ſuffered by the gulph. My deareſt Youwee, ſays I, why did not you tell me this adventure ſooner? It is too ſoon I fear now, ſays ſhe; for ſhe then ſaw the colour forſake my lips, my eyes grow languid, and myſelf dropping into her arms. She ſcreamed out, and ran to the cheſt, where all was empty; but turning every bottle up, and, from the remaining drops in each, collecting a ſmall quantity of liquor, and putting it by little and little to my lips, and rubbing my wriſts and temples, ſhe brought me to myſelf again: But I continued ſo extremely ſick for ſome days after, that it was above a week before I could get down with my cart to fetch up my cheſts.

WHEN I was able to go down, Youwarkee would not venture me alone, but went herſelf with me. We then found two more of the cheſts, which we landed; and I had work ſufficient for two or three days in getting them all up to the grotto, they were ſo heavy, and all the way through the wood being up hill.

WE had five in hand, and watched ſeveral days for the ſixth, when ſeeing nothing of it, we gave it over for loſt. But one day, as I was going for water, Youwarkee would go with me, and urged our carrying the net, that we might drag for ſome fiſh. Accordingly we did ſo. And now having taken what we wanted, we went to the rill, and puſhing in the head of the boat (as I uſually did, for by that means I could fill the veſſel as I ſtood on board) the firſt thing that appeared was my ſixth cheſt. Youwarkee ſpied it firſt, and cried, pointing thereto, O Peter, what we have long wiſhed for, and almoſt deſpaired of, is come at laſt; let us meet and welcome it. I was pleaſed with the gaiety of her fancy; I did as ſhe deſired; we got it into the boat, after merrily ſaluting it, and ſo returned home. It took us up ſeveral days time in ſearching, ſorting, and diſpoſing our cargo, and drying the cheſts; for the goods themſelves were ſo far from being wetted or ſpoiled, that even thoſe in the laſt cheſt, which had lain ſo long in the water, had not taken the leaſt moiſture.

YOUWARKEE was quite alert at the ſucceſs of her packing, but left me to ring her praiſes; which I did not fail of doing, more than once, at unpacking each cheſt, and could ſee her eyes glow with delight, to ſee ſhe had ſo pleaſed me.

She had been so curious as to examine almost every thing in the ship; and as well of things I had described, and she did know, as of what she did not, brought me something for a sample: But, above all, had not forgot the blue stuff; for the moment she had seen that, she destined it to the use of herself and children.

CHAP. XXIII.

The religion of the author's family.

YOUWARKEE and I having fixed ourselves by degrees into a settled rota of action, began to live like Christians, having so great a quantity of most sorts of necessaries about us. But I say we lived like Christians on another account; for you must not think, after what I have said before, that I and my family lived like heathens. No, I'll assure you, they, by degrees, knew all I knew; and that, with a little artificial improvement, and a well regulated disposition, I hoped, and did not doubt, would carry them all to heaven. I would many a time have given all my interest in the ship's cargo for a Bible; and a hundred times grieved that I was not master of a pocket one, which I might have carried every where about me. I never imagined there was one a-board; and if there were, and Youwarkee should find it, I supposed it would be in Portugueze, which I knew little of; so it would be of small service to me if I had it.

Since I am upon the topic of religion, it may not be amiss, once for all, to give you a small sketch of my religious proceedings, after coming into my new dominions. I have already told you, that, from my first stop at the rock, I had prayed constantly morning and

evening, but I can't say I did it always with the same efficacy. However, my imperfect devotions were not without good effect; and I am confident, wherever this course is pursued with a right view, sooner or later the issue will prove the same to others as I found it to myself;—I mean, that mercies will be remembered with more gratitude, and evils be more disregarded, and become less burthensome. And surely the person whose case this is, must necessarily enjoy the truest relish of life. As daily prayer was my practice, in answer to it, I obtained the greatest blessing and comfort my solitude was capable of receiving; I mean my wife, whose character I need not farther attempt to blazon in any faint colours of my own, after what has been already said; her acts having spoken her virtues beyond all verbal description.

After we were married, as I call it, that is, after we had agreed to become man and wife, I frequently prayed before her, and with her, (for by this time she understood a good deal of my language;) at which, though contrary to my expectation, she did not seem surprised, but readily kneeled by and joined with me. This I liked very well. And, upon my asking her one day after prayer, if she understood what I had been doing? (for I had a notion she did not). Yes, verily, says she, you have been making petitions to the image of the great Collwar *. Pray, says I, willing gently to lead her into a just sense of a Supreme Being,) who is this Collwar? And where does he dwell? He it is, says she, that does all good and evil to us. Right, says I, it is in some measure so; but he can't of himself do evil, absolutely and properly, as his own act. Yes, says she, he can; for he can do all that can be done; and

* *God.*

as evil can be done, he can do it. So quick a reply ſtartled me. Thinks I, ſhe will run me a ground preſently; and from being a doctor, as I fancied myſelf, I ſhall become but a pupil to my own ſcholar. I then aſked her where the great Collwar dwelt? She told me in heaven, in a charming place. And can he know what we do, ſays I? Yes, replied ſhe, his image tells him every thing; and I have prayed to his image, which I have often ſeen; and it is filled with ſo much virtue, that it is his ſecond ſelf: For there is only one of them in the world, who is ſo good, he gives ſeveral virtues to other images of himſelf, which are brought to him, and put into his arms to breath upon; and the only thing I have ever regretted ſince I knew you, is, that I have not one of them here to comfort and bleſs us and our children.

THOUGH I was ſorry for the oddity of her conceptions, I was almoſt glad to find her ſo ignorant; and pleaſed myſelf with thinking, that as ſhe had already a confuſed notion of a Supreme Power, I ſhould ſoon have the ſatisfaction of bringing her to a more rational knowledge of him.

PRAY, Youwee, ſays I, what is your god made of? Why of clay, ſays ſhe, finely painted; and looks ſo terrible, he would make you tremble to behold him. Do you think, ſays I, that is the true Collwar's real ſhape, if you could ſee himſelf? She told me yes; for that ſome of his beſt ſervants had ſeen him, and took the repreſentation from himſelf. And, pray, do you think he loves his beſt ſervants, as you call them, and is kind to them? You need not doubt it, ſays ſhe. Why then, replied I, how came he to look ſo terrible upon them when they ſaw him, as you ſay they did? For I can ſee no reaſon, how terrible ſoever he looks to o-

thers, why he ſhould ſhew himſelf ſo to thoſe he loves. I ſhould rather think, as you ſay he is kind to them, that he ſhould have two images, a placid one for his good, and a terrible one for his bad, ſervants. Or elſe, who by ſeeing him, can tell whether he is pleaſed or angry? For even you yourſelf, Youwee, when any thing pleaſes you, have a different look from that you have when you are angry; and little Pedro can tell whether he does well or ill by your countenance: Whereas, if you made no diſtinction, but looked with the ſame face on all his actions, he would as readily think he did well as ill in committing a bad action. Youwarkee could not tell what to ſay to this, the fact ſeeming againſt her.

I THEN aſked her, if ſhe thought the image itſelf could hear her petitions? She replied, yes. And can he, ſays I, return you an anſwer? She told me, he only did that to his beſt ſervants. Did you ever hear him do it? ſays I; for unleſs he can ſpeak too, I ſhould much ſuſpect his hearing; and you being one of his beſt ſervants, ſeeing you love him, and pray heartily to him, why ſhould you not hear him as ſoon as others? No, ſays ſhe, there are a great number of Glumms on purpoſe to ſerve him, pray for us to him, and receive his anſwers. But to what purpoſe then, ſays I, is your praying to him, if their prayer will ſerve your turn? O, ſays ſhe, the image hears them ſooner than us, and ſends the petitions up to the great Collwar, and lets him know who makes them, and deſires him to let them have what they want. But ſuppoſe, ſays I, for arguments ſake, that you could ſee the great Collwar, or know where he was, and ſhould pray to himſelf, without going about to his image firſt, do you think he could not hear you? I can't tell that, ſays ſhe. But how then, ſays I, can he tell what (if it could ſpeak) his

image ſays, which is as far from him as you are? And, pray, do you think he can hear an image which he did not make, which could not make itſelf, and which can neither hear, nor ſee, nor ſpeak, better than he can hear a Glumm whom he did make, and who made that image, and who himſelf can hear, and ſee, and ſpeak to him? She paused here a good while. At laſt, ſays ſhe, Why, truly, I cannot think but he might as well, or better, hear me than the image. Why then, ſaid I, don't you make your petitions to himſelf, and not to the image? It is for the reaſon I have given you, my dear Youwarkee, that I pray to him, and not to his image, or any repreſentation of him upon earth; and, conſequently, am more ſure of being heard and anſwered. Indeed, ſays ſhe, I never thought of that before; for our Ragans * always charged me to pray to the image, or to let them know what I wanted, and they would pray to him for me; and they have had many a Rappin † of me for ſo doing, and ſometimes two or three, when they told me I ſhould have what I wanted. But you have convinced me it is better to pray to himſelf, and I ſhall always do it hereafter.

HAVING conducted my ſcholar thus far, I left off, thinking I had now laid a ſolid baſis, that I need be in no fear for my ſuperſtructure; and as the ſlower you build, the firmer it ſettles, I thought fit to let this firſt work ſettle into a firm principle, before I raiſed any further doctrine upon it, which, as occaſion offered, I determined to purſue. I propagated no theological notions in my children, till they were capable of conceiving the truth of them from principles of reaſon; but only inculcated on them juſtice, truth, and love to myſelf, their mother, and each other. Having brought my wife firm-

* *Prieſts, or holy men.* † *Cake of marmalade.*

ly to believe in a Supreme Being, (let her call him what she would) who could hear our prayers, see our actions, and answer our petitions as he sees fit; and to an assurance that his love to us is so great, that he will do what is most beneficial for us, though it should not always prove what we think so; the great truths concerning his dispensations in our creation and redemption, and our duty towards him, followed of course, as direct consequences of such his love and knowledge of us; and she easily came into them. Accordingly, I opened the doctrine of the creation to her as well as I could. I am sorry to say, my explication of this great point was not so just, so particular, and clear as it might have been, if I had had a Bible, any more than was the succeeding history of our redemption; however, in general, I explained both so effectually, that though it required time to ground her in the full practical faith of it, yet the opinion she had of me, and my fidelity to her, with the reasons I was able to urge for what I taught her, persuaded her I was in the right, and disposed her to hearken to what I delivered; and then her own zealous application, with God's grace, soon brought her to a firm belief in it, and a suitable temper and conduct with respect to God and man.

AFTER I had began with my children, I frequently referred their further instruction to their mother; for I have always experienced, that a superficial knowledge, with a desire of becoming a teacher, is, in some measure, equivalent to better knowledge; for it not only excites every principle one has to the utmost, but makes matters more clear and conspicuous even to one's self.

BY these means, and the divine blessing thereon, in a few years, I may fairly say, I had a little Christian

church in my own houſe, and in a flouriſhing way too, without a Schiſmatic or Heretic amongſt us.

CHAP. XXIV.

The author's account of his children; their names; they are exerciſed in flying; his boat crazy; Youwarkee intends a viſit to her father, but firſt takes another flight to the ſhip; ſends a boat and cheſts through the gulph; clothes her children; is with child again, ſo her viſit is put off; an inventory of the laſt freight of goods; the author's method of treating his children; Youwarkee, her ſon Tommy, with her daughters Patty and Hallicarnie, ſet out to her father's.

I HAD now lived here almoſt fourteen years; and beſides the three ſons before mentioned, had three girls and one boy. Pedro, my eldeſt, had the Graundee, but too ſmall to be uſeful; my ſecond ſon Tommy had it complete, ſo had my three daughters; but Jemmy and David, the youngeſt ſons, none at all. My eldeſt daughter I named Patty, becauſe I always called my firſt wife ſo: I ſay, my firſt wife, though I had no other knowledge of her death than my dream; but am from that as verily perſuaded, if ever I reach England, I ſhall find it ſo, as if I had heard it from her aunt's own mouth. My ſecond daughter my wife deſired might be called by her ſiſter's name, Hallicarnie; and my youngeſt I named Sarah, after my mother. I put you to the trouble of writing down the names, for as I ſhall hereafter have frequent occaſion to mention the children ſeverally, it will be pleaſanter for myſelf and

you to call them by their ſeveral names of diſtinction, than to call them my ſecond ſon, or my eldeſt daughter, and ſo forth.

MY wife now took great delight in exerciſing Tommy and Patty (who were big enough to be truſted) in flight, and would often ſkim round the whole iſland with them before I could walk half through the wood. And ſhe would teach them alſo to ſwim or ſail, I know not which to call it; for ſometimes you ſhould ſee them dart out of the air, as if they would fall on their faces into the lake, when, coming near the ſurface, they would ſtretch their legs in an horizontal poſture, and in an inſtant turn on their backs, and then you could ſee nothing from the bank, to all appearance, but a boat ſailing along, the Graundee riſing at their head, feet, and ſides, ſo like the ſides and ends of a boat, that you could not diſcern the face, or any part of the body. I own, I often envied them this exerciſe, which they ſeemed to perform with more eaſe than I could only ſhake my leg, or ſtir an arm.

THOUGH we had perpetually Swangeans about us, and the voices, as I uſed to call them, I could never once prevail on my wife to ſhew herſelf, or to claim any acquaintance with her countryfolks. And what is very remarkable in my children is, that my three daughters and Tommy, who had the full Graundee, had exactly their mother's ſight, Jemmy and David had juſt my ſight, and Pedro's ſight was between both, though he was never much affected with any light; but I was obliged to make ſpectacles for Tommy and all my daughters when they came to go abroad.

I HAD in this time twice enlarged my dwelling, which the encreaſe of my family had rendered neceſſa-

ry. The laſt alteration I was enabled to do in a much better manner, and with more eaſe, than the firſt; for, by the return of my flota, I had gotten a large collection of uſeful tools: Several of iron, where the handles or wood-work preponderated the iron; but ſuch as were all, or greateſt part of that metal, had got either to the rock, or were ſo faſt fixed to the head of the ſhip, that it was difficult to remove them; ſo that my wife could get comparatively few of this latter ſort; though ſome ſhe did. It was well, truly, I had theſe inſtruments, which greatly facilitated my labours; for I was forced to work harder now than ever, in making proviſion for us all; and my ſons Pedro and Tommy commonly aſſiſted. I had alſo had another importation of goods through the gulph, which ſtill added to my convenience. But my boat made me ſhudder every time I went into her. She had leaked again and again, and I had patched her till I could ſcarce ſee a bit of the old wood. She was of unſpeakable uſe to me, and yet I could not venture myſelf in her, but with the utmoſt apprehenſion and trembling. I had been intending a good while, now I had ſuch helps, to build a new one, but had been diverted by one avocation or other.

About this time Yourwarkee, who was now upwards of thirty-two years of age, the fondeſt mother living, and very proud of her children, had formed a project of taking a flight to Arndrumſtake, a town in the kingdom of Doorpt Swangeami, as I called it, where her father, if living, was a Colamb *; under Georigetti the prince of that country. She imparted her deſire to me, aſking my leave; and ſhe told me, if I pleaſed, ſhe would take Patty and Tommy along with her. I did not much diſlike the propoſal, becauſe of the great in-

* Governor.

clination I had, for a long time, to a knowledge of, and familiarity with, her countrymen and relations; and now I had so many of her children with me, I could not think she would ever be prevailed on, but by force, to quit me and her offspring, and be contented to lose six for the sake of having two with her; especially as she had shewed no more love for them than the rest: So I made no hesitation, but told her she should go.

I EXPECTED continually I should hear of her departure; but she saying no more of it, I thought she had dropped her design, and I did not chuse to mention it. But one day, as we were at dinner, looking mighty seriously, she said, My dear, I have considered of the journey you have consented I should take; but in order thereto it is necessary that I prepare several things for the children, especially those who have no Graundee, and I am resolved to finish them before I go, that we may appear with decency both here and at Arndrums-take: For I am sure my father, whose temper I am perfectly acquainted with, will, upon sight of me and my little ones, be so overjoyed, that he will forgive my absence and marriage, provided he sees reason to believe I have not matched unworthily, unbecoming my birth; and after keeping me and the children with him, it may be two or three months, will accompany me home again himself, with a great retinue of servants and relations; or, at least, if he is either dead or unable for flight, my other relations will come, or send a convoy to take care of me and the children. And, my dear, as I shall give them all the encomiums I can of you, and of my situation with you, while I am among them, I would have them a little taken with the elegance of our domestic condition when they come hither, that they may think me happy in you and my

children: For I would not only put my family into a condition to appear before them, but to ſurpriſe the old gentleman and his company, who never in their lives ſaw any part of mankind with another covering than the Graundee. When ſhe had done, I expreſſed my approbation of her whole ſyſtem, as altogether prudent; and ſhe proceeded immediately to put it in execution. To work ſhe went, opened every cheſt, and examined their contents. But while ſhe was upon the hunt, and ſelecting ſuch things as ſhe thought fit for her purpoſe, ſhe recollected ſeveral articles ſhe had obſerved in the ſhip, which ſhe judged far more for her turn than any ſhe had at home. Hereupon ſhe prayed me to let her take another trip to the veſſel, and to carry Tommy with her.

AFTER ſo many trials, and ſuch happy experience of her wife and fortunate conduct, I conſented to her flight, and away went ſhe and her ſon. Upon their return, which was in a few days, ſhe told me what they had been doing, and ſaid, as ſhe ſo often heard me complain of the age of my boat, and fear to ſail in her, ſhe had fitted me out a little ſhip, and hoped it would in due time arrive ſafely. As ſhe paſſed quickly on to other things, I never once thought of aſking her what ſhe meant by the little ſhip ſhe ſpoke of; but muſt own, that, like a fooliſhly fond parent, I was more intent on her telling me how Tommy had found a hoard of play-things, which he had packed up for his own uſe.

As to this laſt particular, I learned by the ſequel of the ſtory, when the ſpark, proud of his acquiſition, came to me, that he had been peeping about in the cabin, whilſt his mother was packing the cheſts, and ſeeing a ſmall braſs knob in the wainſcot, took it for a plaything, and pulling to get it out, opened a little door

of a cupboard, where he had found ſome very pretty toys, that he poſitively claimed for himſelf; among which were, a ſmall plain gold ring, and a very fine one ſet with diamonds, which he ſhewed me upon two of his fingers. I wondered how the child, who had never before ſeen ſuch things, or the uſe of them, ſhould happen to apply theſe ſo properly; but he told me, in playing with this, meaning the diamond ring, about his fingers, it ſlipped over his middle-finger joint, and he could not get it off again; ſo he put the other upon another finger to keep it company.

WE watched daily, as uſual on ſuch occaſions, for the arrival of our fleet. It was ſurpriſing that none of the cheſts which Youwarkee ſhot down the gulph, were ever half ſo long in their paſſage as I was myſelf; but ſome came in a week, ſome in a few days more, and even ſome in leſs; which I attributed to their following directly the courſe of the water, ſhooting from ſhelf to ſhelf as the tide ſet; and I believe my keeping the boat I ſailed in ſo ſtrictly and conſtantly in the middle of the ſtream, was the reaſon of my being detained there ſo long. In leſs than a fortnight, every thing came ſafe but one cheſt, which, as we never heard of it, I ſuppoſe was either ſunk or bulged.

BEING one day upon ſhore, watching to ſee if any thing more was come through the cavern, I ſpied at a diſtance ſomewhat looking very black and very long, and, by the colour and ſhape thereof, I took it for a young whale. Having obſerved it ſome time making very little way, I took my old boat and followed it; but was afraid to go near it, leſt a ſtroke with its tail (which I then fancied I ſaw move) might endanger my boat and myſelf too; but creeping nearer and nearer, and ſeeing it did not ſtir, I believed it to be dead;

whereupon taking courage, I drew ſo cloſe, that at length I plainly perceived it was the ſhip's ſecond boat turned upſide down. It is not eaſy to expreſs the joy I felt on this diſcovery. It was the very thing I was now, as I have ſaid, in the greateſt want of. I preſently laid hold of it, and brought it ashore; and it was no ſmall pleaſure to find, on examining, that though it had lain ſo long dry, it was yet quite ſound, and all its chinks filled up in its paſſage; and it proved to me afterwards the moſt beneficial thing I could have had from the ſhip.

I got all my goods home from the lake to my grotto, by means of the cart, as uſual. My wife and daughters waited with impatience for me to unpack, that they might take poſſeſſion of ſuch things as would be needful for rigging out the family, againſt the ſuppoſed reception of the old Glumm, and had ſet all the cheſts in the order they deſired they might be opened in. But Tommy running to me, with a pray daddy open my cheſt firſt, pray give me my playthings firſt, it was (to ſatisfy him) concluded in favour of his demand. So, he pointing to the cheſt which he regarded as his property, I opened it, whilſt his eyes were ready to pierce through it, till I came to his treaſure. There, there they are, daddy, ſays he, as ſoon as I had uncovered them. And, indeed, when I ſaw them, I could not but much commend the child for his fancy; for the firſt things that appeared were a ſilver punch or wine can and a ladle, then a gold watch, a pair of ſciſſars, a ſmall ſilver chafing-diſh and lamp, a large caſe of mathematical inſtruments, a flagellet, a terrella or globular loadſtone, a ſmall globe, a dozen of large ſilver ſpoons, and a ſmall caſe of knives and forks and ſpoons. In ſhort, there was, I believe, the greateſt part of the Portugueſe Captain's valuable effects.

THESE Tommy claiming as his own proper chattels, I could not help interposing somewhat of my authority in the affair. Hold, hold, son, says I, these things are all mine; but as I have several of you, who will all be equally pleased with them, though, as the first finder, you may be entitled to the best share, you are not to grasp the whole; you must all have something like an equality: And as to some things which may be equally useful to us all, they must be set up to be used upon occasion, and are to be considered as mine and your mother's property. I thereupon gave each of them a large silver spoon, and with a fork I scratched the initials of their names respectively on them, and divided several of the trifles amongst them equally. And now Tommy, says I, you, for your pains, shall have this more than the rest, offering him the flagellet. Tommy looked very gloomy; and though he durst not find fault, his dissatisfaction was very visible, by coolly taking it, tossing it down, and walking gravely off. I thought, says I, Tommy, I had made a good choice for you; but, as I find you despise it; here Pedro, do you take that pretty thing, since your brother slights it. Tommy replied, (speaking but half out, and a little surly, more than I ever observed before,) let him take it, if he will, I can get bits of sticks enough in the wood.

MY method had always been to avoid either beating or scolding at my children, for preferring their own opinion to mine; but I ever let things turn about so, that from their own reason they should perceive they had erred in opposing my sentiments; by which means they grew so habituated to submit to my advice and direction, that, for the most part, my will was no sooner known to them, than it became their own choice; but then I never willed according to fancy only, but with judgment, to the best of my skill.

TOMMY therefore (as I ſaid before) having ſhewn a diſapprobation of my doings, to convince him of his miſtake, I took the flagellet from Pedro, and now Pedro, ſays I, let me teach you how to manage this piece of wood, as Tommy calls it, and then let me ſee if in all the grove he can cut ſuch another. On this I clapt it to my mouth, and immediately played ſeveral country dances and hornpipes on it; for though my mother had ſcarce taught me to read, I had learnt muſic and dancing, being, as ſhe called them, gentleman-like accompliſhments. My wife and children, eſpecially Tommy, all ſtared as if they were wild, firſt on me, then on one another, whilſt I played a country dance; but I had no ſooner ſtruck up an hornpipe, than their feet, arms, and heads, had ſo many twitchings and convulſive motions, that not one quiet limb was to be ſeen amongſt them; till, having exerciſed their members as long as I ſaw fit, I almoſt laid them all to ſleep with Chevy-Chaſe, and ſo gave over.

THEY no ſooner found themſelves free from this enchantment, than the children all huſled round me in a cluſter, all ſpeaking together, and reaching out their little hands to the inſtrument. I gave it to Pedro. There, ſays I to him, take this ſlighted favour as no ſuch contemptible preſent.

POOR Tommy, who had all this while looked very ſimple, burſt into a flood of tears at my laſt words, as if his heart would have broke; and running to me, fell on his knees and begged my pardon, hoping I would forgive him. I took him up, and, kiſſing him, told him he had very little offended me; for, as he knew, I had more children to give any thing to which either of the reſt deſpiſed, it was equal to me who had it, ſo it was thankfully received. I found that did not ſatisfy. Still

in tears, he said, might he not have the stick again, as I gave it to him first? Tommy, says I, you know I gave it to you first; but you disapproving my kindness, I have now given it to Pedro, who, should I against his will take it from him, would have that reason to complain which you have not, who parted with it by your own consent; and therefore, Tommy, as I am determined to acquaint you, as near as I can, with the strict rules of justice, there must no more be said to me of this matter. Such as this was my constant practice amongst them; and they having always found me inflexible from this rule, we seldom had any long debates.

THOUGH I say the affair ended so, with regard to what I had to do in it, yet it ended not so with Tommy; for though he knew he had no hopes of moving me, he set all his engines at work to recover his stick, (as he called it) by his mother's and sister's interest. These solicited Pedro very strongly to gratify him. At length Pedro (he being a boy of a most humane disposition) granted their desire, if I would give leave; and I having signified, that the cause being now out of my hands, he might do as he pleased, he generously yielded it. And indeed he could not have bestowed it more properly; for Tommy had the best ear for music I ever knew, and in less than a twelvemonth could far outdo me, his instructor, in softness and easiness of finger; and was also master of every tune I knew, which were neither inconsiderable in number, or of the lowest rate.

YOUNARKEE, with her daughters, sat close to work, and had but just completed her whole design for the family clothing, when she told me she found herself with child again. As that circumstance ill suited a journey, she deferred her flight for about fifteen months, in which time she was brought to bed, and weaned the

infant, which was a boy, whom I named Richard, after my good maſter at the academy. The little knave thrived amain, and was left to my further nurſing during its mammy's abſence; who, ſtill firm to her reſolution, after ſhe had equipped herſelf and companions with whatever was neceſſary to their travelling, and locked up all the apparel ſhe had made till her return, becauſe ſhe would have it appear new when her father came, ſet out with her ſon Tommy and my two daughters Patty and Hallicarnie; the laſt of which, by this time, being big enough alſo to be truſted with her mother.

CHAP. XXV.

Youwarkee's account of the ſtages to Arndrumnſtake; the author uneaſy at her flight; his employment in her abſence, and preparations for receiving her father; how he ſpent the evenings with his children.

MY wife was now upon her journey to her father's; but where that was, or how far off, it was impoſſible for me to conceive by her deſcription of the way: For ſhe diſtinguiſhed it not by miles or leagues, but by Swangeans, and names of rocks, ſeas, and mountains, which I could neither comprehend the diſtance of from each other, or from Graundevolet where I was. I underſtood by her, indeed, there was a great ſea to be paſſed, which would take her up almoſt a day and night, having the children with her, before ſhe reached the next Arkoe; though ſhe could do it herſelf, ſhe ſaid, and ſtrain hard, in a ſummer's night. But if the

children ſhould flag by the way, as there was no reſting place between us and Battringdrigg, the next Arkoe, it might be dangerous to them; ſo ſhe would take the above time for their ſakes. After this, I found by what ſhe ſaid, there was a narrow ſea to paſs, and a prodigious mountain, before ſhe reached her own country; and that her father's was but a little beyond that mountain. This was all I could know in general about it. At their departure, ſhe and the children had taken each a ſmall proviſion for their flight, which hung about their necks in a ſort of purſe.

I CAN'T ſay, notwithſtanding this journey was taken with my concurrence and conſent, that I was perfectly eaſy when they were gone; for my affection for them all would work up imaginary fears, too potent for my reaſon to diſpel, and which at firſt ſat with no eaſy preſſure upon my mind. This my pretty babies at home perceiving, uſed all the little winning arts they could to divert and keep up my ſpirits; and, from day to day, by taking them abroad with me, and playing with and amuſing them at home, I grew more and more perſuaded that all would go right with the abſent, and that in due time I ſhould ſee them return again.

BUT as the winter ſet in, I went little abroad, and then we employed ourſelves within doors in preparing ſeveral things, which might not only be uſeful and ornamental, if the old Glumm ſhould come to ſee us, but might alſo divert us, and make the time paſs leſs tediouſly. The firſt thing I went upon was a table, which, as my family conſiſted of ſo many, I intended to make big enough for us all. With that view I broke up a couple of cheſts, and taking the two ſides of one of them, I nailed them edge to edge, by ſtrong thick pieces underneath, at each end, and in the middle; then I took

two cheſt-lids with their hinges, nailing one to each ſide of my middle-piece, which made two good flaps; after this, with my tools, of which I had now a cheſt full, I chopped out of new ſtuff and planed four ſtrong legs quite ſquare, and nailed them ſtrongly to each corner of my middle board; I then nailed pieces from one leg to the other, and nailed the bed likewiſe to them; then I faſtened a border quite round, within ſix inches from the bottom, from foot to foot, which held all faſt together. When all this was done, ſtill my table was imperfect; I could not put up the flaps, having no proper ſupport. To remedy this, I ſawed out a broad ſlip from a cheſt ſide, and boring a large hole through the centre, I ſpiked it up to the under ſide of the table's bed, with a ſpindle. I contrived, juſt looſe enough to play round the head of the ſpike, filing down that part of the ſpindle which paſſed through the bed of the table, and rivetting it cloſe; ſo that when my flaps were ſet up, I pulled the ſlip croſſways of the table, and when the flaps were down, the ſlip turned under the top of the table lengthways; next under each flap, I nailed a ſmall ſlip, the lengthways of the flaps, to raiſe them on a level (when up) with the top of the table. When I had thus completed the ſeveral parts of this needful utenſil, I ſpent ſome time and pains, by ſcraping and rubbing, to render it all as elegant as could be; and the ſucceſs ſo well anſwered my wiſh, that I was not a little proud of the performance. And what rendered my work thereon a ſtill more agreeable taſk, was my pretty infants company, who ſtood by, expreſſing their wonder and approbation at every ſtroke.

Now I had gotten a table, I wanted chairs to it; for as yet we had only ſat round the room upon cheſts, which formed a bench of the whole circumference, they ſtood ſo thick. There was no moving of them with-

out a monſtrous trouble, every time I might have occaſion to ſet out my table; beſides, if I could have dragged them backwards and forwards, they were too low to be commodious for ſeats; ſo I reſolved to make ſome chairs, and ſtools alſo, that might be manageable. I will not trouble you with the ſteps I took in the formation of theſe; only, in general, you muſt know, that ſome more cheſts I broke up to that purpoſe ſerved me for timber, out of which I framed ſix ſizeable handſome chairs, and a competent number of ſtools.

BUT now that I was turned joiner, I had another convenience to provide for. I had nothing wherein to incloſe things, and preſerve them from duſt, except the cheſts, and they were quite unfit for holding liquors, victuals, and ſuch like matters, in open ſhells, as moſt of my veſſels were. Wherefore, having ſeveral boards now remaining, of the boxes I had broken up for chairs and ſtools, I bethought me of ſupplying this great deficiency; ſo, of theſe ſpare boards, in a workman-like way, (for by this time I was become a tolerable mechanic,) I compoſed a very tight cloſet, holding half a dozen broad ſhelves, ſhut up by a good pair of doors, with a lock and a key to faſten them.

THESE jobs took me up almoſt three months, and I thought I had not employed them idly, but for the credit and ſervice of my family. I was now again at leiſure for farther projects. I was uncertain as to my wife's return, how ſoon ſhe might be with me, or how much longer ſhe might ſtay; but I was ſure I could do nothing in the mean while more grateful, than encreaſing, by all means in my power, the accommodations of my houſe, for the more polite as well as convenient reception of her father, or any elſe who might accompany her home in the way of a retinue, as ſhe talked

of. I ſaw plainly I had not room for lodging of them, and that was a circumſtance of main importance to be provided for. Hereupon I thought of adding a long apartment to one of my outer rooms, to range againſt the ſide of the rock; but reflecting, that ſuch a thing would be quite uſeleſs, unleſs I could finiſh it in time, ſo as to be complete when my gueſts came, and not knowing how ſoon that might be, I reſolved to quit this deſign; and I fell upon another, which might do as well, and required much leſs labour, and fewer days, to perfect.

I REMEMBERED, that amongſt thoſe things my wife had packed up on board the ſhip, and which came home through the gulph, there were two of the largeſt ſails, and a couple of ſmaller ſize. Theſe I carried to the wood, and tried them in ſeveral places, to ſee where they might be diſpoſed to moſt advantage, in the nature of a tent; and having found a convenient ſpot to my purpoſe, I cut divers poles for ſupporters, and making ſtraining-lines of my mat-weed, I pitched a noble one, ſufficient to cover or entertain a numerous company, and ſo tight every where as to keep out the weather. The front of this new apartment I hung with blue cloth, which had a very genteel effect. I had almoſt forgotten to tell you, that I contrived ſo, (by hanging one of the ſmaller ſails acroſs, juſt in the middle, which I could let down or raiſe up at pleaſure); as to divide the tent occaſionally into two diſtinct rooms.

WHEN I had proceeded thus far, there were ſtill wanting ſeats for this additional building, as I may call it; and though I could ſpare ſome cheſts to ſit on, I found they would not half do. For a ſupplement then I took my ax, and felled a couple of great trees, one

from each ſide of the tent, ſawed off the tops, and cut each of the trunks in two about the middle; theſe huge cylinders I rolled into the tent with a good deal of toil and difficulty; two of them I thruſt into the inner diviſion, and left two in the outer; I placed them as benches on both ſides; then with infinite pains I ſhaved the upper face of each ſmooth and flat, and pared off all the little knots and roughneſſes of the front, ſo that they were fitted to ſit on; and their own weight fixed them in the place where I intended them to be. At the upper end of the further chamber I ſet three cheſts lengthways for ſeats, or any other uſe I might ſee fit to put them to.

DURING theſe operations we were all hard at it, and no hand idle, but Dicky in arms, and Sally, whom he kept in full employ; but Pedro, being a ſturdy lad, could drive a nail, and lift or carry the things I wanted; and Jemmy and David, though ſo young, could pick up the chips, hold a nail or the lamp, or be ſome way or other uſeful: For I always preached to them the neceſſity of earning their bread before they eat it, and not think to live on mine and their brother's labour.

THE nights being pretty long, after work was over, and Sarah had fed her brother, and laid him in his hammock, we uſed to ſit all down to enjoy ourſelves at a good meal, for we were never regular at that till night; and then after meal, my wife being abſent, one or other of the young ones would begin with ſomething they had before heard me ſpeak of, by ſaying, Daddy, how did you uſe to do this or that in England; then all ears were immediately open to catch my anſwer, which certainly brought on ſomething elſe, done either there or elſewhere; and by their little queſtions, and my anſwers, they would ſometimes draw me into a ſtory of

three hours long, till perhaps two out of three of my audience were falling aſleep, and then we went all to bed.

I VERILY believe my children would, almoſt any of them, from the frequent repetition of theſe ſtories, have given a ſufficient account of England, to have gained a belief from almoſt any Engliſhman of their being natives there.

I FREQUENTLY obſerved, that when we had begun upon Cornwall, and traverſed the mines, the ſea coaſt, or talked of the fine gentlemen's ſeats, and ſuch things, one would ſtart up, and, if the diſcourſe flagged ever ſo little, would cry, Ay, but daddy, what did you do when the crocodile came after you out of the water; and another, before that ſubject was half ended, (and I was forced to enter on every one they ſtarted,) would be impatient for the ſtory of the lion; and I always took notice, that the part each had made the moſt reflections on was always moſt acceptable to the ſame perſon: But poor Sally would never let the converſation drop without ſome account of the Muletto, it was ſuch a pretty gentle creature ſhe ſaid.

CHAP. XXVI.

The author's concern at Youwarkee's ſtay; reflections on his condition; hears a voice call him; Youwarkee's brother Quangrollart viſits him with a companion; he treats them at the grotto; the brother diſcovers himſelf by accident; Wilkins produces his children to him.

MY head, as well as my hands, had now been employed for five months, in adjuſting all things in the moſt ſuitable manner for the reception of Youwar-

kee and her friend; but nobody coming, and light days getting forward apace, I began to grow very uneasy, and had formed divers imaginations of what might occasion her stay. Thought I, I am afraid all the pains I have been taking will be to no purpose, for either her father will not let her return, or she has of herself come to such a resolution: For she knows I cannot follow her, and had rather perhaps live, and enjoy the three children she has with her, amidst a number of her friends and acquaintance, than spend the remainder of her days with me and all our offspring in this solitude. But then I reflected, she chose it herself, or at least declared herself perfectly satisfied, yea, delighted therewith; and here are her children with me, the major part of them. Yet, what can I think; since her return is put off till the Swangeans are over at this Arkoe, she will never bring her relations now, in this unseasonable time for flight: Therefore I must think, if she intended to return at all, it would have been before now; and as the case is not so, my fear of losing her intirely prevails greatly. O! says I, that we had but a post here, as we have in England; there we can communicate our thoughts at a distance to each other, without any trouble, and for little charge! What a country is this to live in, and what an improper creature am I to live in it! Had I but the Graundee, I would have found her out by this time, be she where she would; but, whilst every one about me can pass, repass, and act as they please, I am fixed here like one of my trees, bound to the spot, or upon removal, to die in the attempt. Alas! why did I beget children here, but to make them as wretched and inconsolable as myself. Some of them are so formed, indeed, as to shift for themselves; but they owe it to their mother, not to me! What! am I a father of children who will be bound one day to curse me? Severe reflection! yet I never thought of this till now.

But, am I the only father in ſuch a caſe? No ſurely: For am not I as much bound to curſe my father, as my children are to curſe me? He might have left me happy if he would, I would them if I could. Again, are there not others, who, by improper junction with perſons diſeaſed in body, or vicious in mind, have entailed greater miſery upon their poſterity, than I have on mine? My children are all healthy, ſtrong, and ſound, both in body and mind; and is not that the greateſt bleſſing that can be beſtowed on our beings? But they are impriſoned in this Arkoe. What then? with induſtry here is no want; and, as they encreaſe, they may ſettle in communities, and be helpful to each other. I have lived well here nigh ſixteen years, and it was God's pleaſure I ſhould be here; and can I think I was placed here, with an injunction contrary to the great command, *Increaſe and multiply?* If that were ſo, can it be poſſible I ſhould have received the only means of propagating as it were from heaven itſelf? No; it was certainly as much my Maker's will that I ſhould have poſterity here, as that I myſelf ſhould at firſt be brought hither. This is a large and plentiful ſpot, and capable of great improvement, when there ſhall be hands ſufficient. How many petty ſtates are leſs than theſe my dominions? I have here a compaſs of near twenty miles round, and how many thouſands grow voluntarily grey in a far leſs circuit.

I HAD hardly finiſhed my reflections, (for I was ſitting by myſelf in my tent upon one of the trees I had turned into benches,) when I heard a muſical voice call Peter, Peter. I ſtarted; what's this, ſays I, it is not Youwarkee's voice; what can this mean? Liſtening, I heard it again; but at ſo great a diſtance, I could but juſt perceive the ſound. Be where it will, ſays I, I'll face it. Thus ſpeaking, I went out of the

tant, and hearkened very attentively, but could hear nothing. I then run for my gun, and walked through the wood as faſt as I could to the plain; but ſtill I neither ſaw or heard any thing. I was then in hopes of ſeeing ſomebody on the lake, but no one appeared; for I was fully determined to make myſelf known to whomſoever I ſhould meet, and, if poſſible, to gain ſome intelligence of my wife. But after ſo much fruitleſs pains, my hopes being at an end, I was returning, when I heard Peter, Peter, again, at a great diſtance; the ſound coming from a different quarter than at firſt. Upon this I ſtopped, and heard it repeated, and it was as if the ſpeaker approached nearer and nearer. Hereupon I ſtepped out of the wood, (for I had juſt re-entered it upon my return home) when I ſaw two perſons upon the Swangean, juſt over my head. I cried out, Who's that; and they immediately called again, Peter, Peter, *Ors clam gee*, ſays I, that is, Here am I. On this they directly took a ſmall ſweep round, (for they had overſhot me before they heard me,) and alighted juſt by me; when I perceived them to be my wife's countrymen, being dreſſed like her, with only broader chaplets about their heads, as ſhe had told me the Glumm all wore. After a ſhort obeiſance, they aſked me if I was the Glumm Peter, Barkett * to Youwarkee? I anſwered, I was. They then told me they came with a meſſage from Pendlehamby, † Colamb of Arndrumnſtake, my goppo ‡, and from Youwarkee his daughter. I was vaſtly rejoiced to ſee them, and to hear only the name of my wife. But though I longed to know their meſſage, I trembled to think of their mentioning it, as one of them was juſt going to do, for fear of hearing ſome things very diſpleaſing; ſo I begged them to go through the wood with me to the grotto, where we

* *Huſband.* † *Governor.* ‡ *Father-in-law.*

ſhould have more leiſure and convenience for talk, and where, at the ſame time, they might take ſome refreſhment. But though I had thus put off their meſſage, I could not forbear enquiring by the way, after the health of my goppa, and my wife and children, how they got to Arndruminſtake, and how they found their relations and friends. They told me all were well; and that Youwarkee, as ſhe did on me, deſired I would think on her with true affection: I found this was the phraſe of the country. As for the reſt, I hoped it would turn out well at laſt, though I dreaded to hear it.

BEING arrived at the grotto, I deſired my gueſts to ſit down, and take ſuch refreſhment as I could prepare them. When they were ſeated, I went to work in order to provide them a repaſt. Seeing my fire piled up very high, and burning fierce, and the children about it, they wondered where they were got, and who they had come to, and turned their faces from it; but I ſetting ſome chairs, ſo that the light might not ſtrike on their eyes, they liked the warmth well enough; though I remarked the light did not affect them ſo much as it had done Youwarkee.

WHILST I was cooking, the poor children got all up in a corner, and ſtared at the ſtrangers, not being able to conceive where they came from; and by degrees crept all backwards into the bedchamber, and hid themſelves; for they had never before ſeen any body but my own family.

I OBSERVED that one of my gueſts paid more than ordinary reſpect to the other; and though their Graundees made no diſtinction between them, yet there was ſomething, I thought, much more noble in the addreſs and behaviour of the latter, and taking notice that the

was alſo the chief ſpokeſman, I judged it proper to pay my reſpects to him in a ſomewhat more diſtinguiſhing manner, though ſo as not to offend the other if I ſhould happen to be miſtaken.

I FIRST preſented a can of my Madeira, and took care, as if by accident, to give it to Mr Uppermoſt, as I thought him; who drank half of it, and would have given the remainder to his companion; but I begged him to drink it all up, and his friend ſhould be ſerved with ſome preſently. He did ſo, and thanked me by lifting his hand to his chin. I then gave the other a can of the ſame liquor, which he drank, and returned thanks as his companion had before. I then took a can myſelf, and telling them I begged leave to uſe the ceremony of my own country to them, I drank, wiſhing their own health, and that of all relations at Arndrumnſtake. He that I took for the ſuperior fell a laughing heartily; ha, ha, ha, ſays he, this is the very way my ſiſter does every day at Arndrumnſtake. Your ſiſter, Sir, ſays I, pray has ſhe ever been in Europe or in England. Well, ſays he, I have plainly diſcovered myſelf, which I did not intend to do yet; but truly brother Peter, I mean none other than your own wife Youwarkee.

THE moment I knew who he was, I roſe up, and taking him by the right hand, lifted it to my lips, and kiſſed it. He likewiſe immediately ſtood up, and we embraced each other with great tenderneſs. I then begged him, as I had ſo worthy and near a relation of my wife's with me, that he would not delay the happineſs I hoped for, in a narrative from his mouth, how it fared with my father, wife, and children, and all their kinsfolks and friends, whom I had ſo often heard mentioned by my deareſt Youwarkee, and ſo earneſtly deſired to ſee.

My brother Quangrollart (for that he told me was his name), was preparing to gratify my impatience; but seeing I had set the entertainment on the table, which consisted chiefly of bread, several sorts of pickles and preserves, with some cold salted fish, he said, that eating would but interrupt the thread of his discourse, and therefore, with my leave, he would defer the relating of what I desired for a little while; which we all thinking most proper, I desired him and his friend (who might be another brother for ought I knew), to refresh themselves with the poor modicum I was able to provide them.

Whilst my brother Quangrollart was looking upon and handling his plate, being what he had never before seen, his friend had got the handle of one of the knives in his mouth, biting it with all his force; but finding he could make nothing of that end, he tried the other, and got to champing the blade. Perceiving what he was at, though I could not help laughing, I rose, and begging pardon, took the knife from him; telling him, I believed he was not acquainted with the use of that instrument, which was one of my country implements; and that the design of it, which was called a knife, and of that other, pointing to it, called a fork, were, the one to reduce the food into pieces proper for chewing, and the other to convey it to the mouth without daubing the fingers, which must happen in handling the food itself. And I then shewed him what use I put them to, by helping each of them therewith to somewhat, and by cutting a piece for myself, and putting it to my mouth with the fork.

They both smiled, and looked very well pleased;

and then I told them that the plate was the only thing that need be daubed, and when that was taken away, the table remained clean. So, after I had helped each of them for the firſt time, I deſired them to help themſelves where they liked beſt: And, to ſay the truth, they did ſo, more dextrouſly than I could have expected.

DURING our repaſt, we had frequent ſketches of the obſervations they made in their flight, and of the places whete they had reſted; and I could plainly ſee, that neither of them had ever been at this Arkoe before, by hinting, that if they had not taken ſuch a courſe, they had miſſed me.

I TOOK particular notice which part of my entertainment they eat moſt of, that I might bring, a freſh ſupply of that when wanted; and I found, that though they eat heartily of my bread and preſerves, and taſted almoſt of every thing elſe, they never once touched the fiſh; which put me upon deſiring I might help them to ſome. At this they looked upon each other, which I readily knew the meaning of, and excuſed themſelves, expreſſing great ſatisfaction in what they had already gotten. I took however a piece of fiſh on my own plate, and eating very heartily thereof, my brother deſired me to give him a bit of it; I did ſo, taking care to cut it as free from bones as I could, and for greater ſecurity cautioning him, in caſe there ſhould be any, to pick them out, and not ſwallow them. He had no ſooner put a piece in his mouth, but, Roſig, ſays he to his friend, this is Padſi. I thought indeed I had puzzled my brother when I gave him the fiſh, but by what he ſaid of it he puzzled me; for I knew not what he meant by Padſi, my wife having told me they had no fiſh: or elſe I ſhould have taken that word for their name of it. However, I cut Roſig a ſlice; and he, agreeing it was Padſi, they both eat heartily of it.

WHILE we were at dinner, my brother told me he thought he ſaw ſome of my children juſt now; for his ſiſter had informed him ſhe had five more at home; and he aſked me why they did not appear, and eat with us. I excuſed their coming, as fearing they would only be troubleſome; and ſaid, when we had done they ſhould have ſome victuals. But he would not be put off, and entreated me to admit them. So I called them by their names, and they came, all but Dicky, who was aſleep in his hammock. I told them, that * Reglumm, pointing to Quangrollart, was their uncle, their mamma's brother, and ordered them to pay their obeiſance to him, which they ſeverally did. I then made them ſalute Roſig. This laſt would have had them ſit down at table; but I poſitively forbid that; and giving each of them a little of what we had before us, they carried it to the cheſts and eat it there.

WHEN we had done, the children helped me to clear the table, and were retiring out of the room; but then I recalled them, and deſired their uncle to excuſe their ſtay: For, as he had promiſed me news of their mammy and her fami'y, it would be the height of pleaſure to them to hear him. He ſeemed very much pleaſed with this motion, deſiring by all means they might be preſent while he told his ſtory. Whereupon I ordered them to the cheſts again, while Quangrollart delivered his narrative.

* *Gentleman.*

CHAP. XXVII.

Quangrollart's account of Youwarkee's journey, and reception at her father's.

HAVING ſet on the table ſome brandy and Madeira, and each of us taken one glaſs of both, I ſhewed by the attentiveneſs of my aſpect and poſture how deſirous I was he ſhould proceed to what he had promiſed. Obſerving this, he went on in the following manner. Brother Peter, ſays he, my ſiſter Youwarkee, as I do not doubt you will be glad to hear of her firſt, arrived very ſafe at Arndrumnſtake, the third day after ſhe left you, and after a very ſevere flight to the dear little * Hallycarnie, who was a full day and a night on her Graundee; and at laſt would not have been able to have reached Battindrigg but for my ſiſter's aſſiſtance, who, taking her ſometimes on her back for a ſhort flight, by thoſe little refreſhments enabled her to perform it; but, from Battindrigg, after ſome hours reſt, they came with pleaſure to the White Mountains, from whence, after a ſmall ſtay, they arrived at Arndrumnſtake.

THEY alighted at our † Covet, but were oppoſed at their entrance by the guards, to whom they did not chuſe to diſcover themſelves, till notice was given to my father; who, upon hearing that ſome ſtrangers deſired admittance to him, ſent me to introduce them, if they were proper for his preſence, or elſe give orders for ſuch other reception as was ſuitable to them.

* *One of Wilkin's daughter's.*

† *Capital Seat.*

WHEN I came to the gaurd, I found three Gawreys, and a * Glumm Bofs, whofe appearance and behaviour, I muft own, prejudiced me very much in their favour, I then aſked from whence they came, and their buſineſs with the Colamb? Youwarkee told me they came not about buſineſs of public concern, relating to the Colamb's office, but out of a dutiful regard, as relations, to kiſs his knees. My father, ſaid I, ſhall know it immediately; but firſt, pray inform me of your name? Your father, replied Youwarkee, are you my brother Quangrollart? My name is ſo, ſays I, but I have only one ſiſter, now with my father, and how I can be your brother, I am not able to gueſs. Have you never had another ſiſter, ſays ſhe? Yes, ſays I, but ſhe is long ſince dead; her name was Youwarkee. At my mentioning her name, ſhe fell upon my neck in tears, crying, my dear brother, I am that dead ſiſter Youwarkee, and theſe with me are ſome of my children, for I have five more; but pray how does my father and ſiſter? ſtarted back at this declaration, to view her and the children, fearing it was ſome groſs impoſition; not in the leaſt knowing or remembering any thing of her face, after ſo long an abſence; but I deſired them to walk in, till I told my father.

THE guard, obſerving the ſeveral paſſages between us, were amazed to think who it could be had had ſo familiarly embraced me; eſpecially as they plainly ſaw I only played a paſſive part in it.

WHEN I went in, I did not think proper directly to inform my father what had happened; but calling my ſiſter Hallycarnie, I let her into the circumſtances of this odd affair, and deſired her advice what to do: For, ſays I, ſurely this muſt be ſome impoſture; and as my

* *A youth.*

father has ſcarce yet ſubdued his ſorrow for my ſiſter's loſs, if this Gawry ſhould prove a deceiver, it will only revive his affliction, and may prove, at this time, extremely dangerous to him: Therefore let us conſider, what had beſt to be done in the matter.

HALLYCARNIE, who had attentively weighed all, I ſaid, ſeemed to think it was ſome cheat, as well as I did; for we could neither of us conceive, that any thing but death, or being ſlit, could have kept Youwarkee ſo long from the knowledge of her relations; and, that neither of them could be the caſe, was plain, if the perſon attending was Youwarkee. Beſides, brother, ſays Hallycarnie, ſhe cannot ſurely be ſo much altered in fifteen years, but you muſt have known her: And yet, now I think, it is poſſible, you being ſo much younger, may have forgot her; but whilſt we have been talking of her, I have ſo well recollected her, that I think I could hardly be impoſed upon by any deceiver.

I THEN deſired her to go with me to the ſtrangers, and ſee if ſhe could make any diſcovery. She did ſo; and had no ſooner entered the * Abb, but Youwarkee called out, my dear ſiſter Hallycarnie; and ſhe as readily recollecting Youwarkee, they in tranſport embraced each other; and then your wife, preſenting to us her three children, it proved the tendereſt ſcene, except the following, I ever ſaw.

MY father having kept his chamber ſome time with a fever, and, though he was pretty well recovered, having not yet been out of it; we conſulted how we might introduce our ſiſter and her children to him, with as little ſurpriſe as might be, for fear of a relapſe, by too

* *Room.*

great a hurry of his ſpirits. At length we concluded, I ſhould go tell him, that ſome ſtrangers had arrived, deſiring to ſee him; but, on inquiry, finding their buſineſs was too trifling to trouble him upon, I had diſpatched them: I was then to ſay, how like one of them was to my ſiſter Youwarkee; and, whilſt I was ſpeaking, Hallycarnie was to enter, and keep up the diſcourſe, till we ſhould find a proper opportunity of diſcovery. I went in, therefore, as had been agreed; and, upon mentioning the name of Youwarkee, my father fetched a deep ſigh, and turned away from me in tears. At that inſtant, Hallycarnie came in as by accident; Sir, ſays ſhe, what makes you ſo ſad, are you worſe to-day? O! ſays he, I have heard a name that will never be out of my heart, till I am in * Hoximo. What, I ſuppoſe my ſiſter? 'Tis true, replied he, the ſame. Says ſhe, I fancied ſo; for I have juſt ſeen a ſtranger as like her as two † Doris could be, and would have ſworn it was ſhe, if that had been poſſible. I thought my brother had been ſo imprudent as to mention her to you; and I think he did not do well to rip up an old ſore he knew was almoſt healed, and make it break out afreſh. Ah! no, child, ſays my father, that ſore never has, or can be healed. O great image! why cannot I by ſome means or other be aſcertained what end ſhe came to.

SIR, ſays my ſiſter, I think you are much to blame for theſe exclamations, after ſo long abſence: For, if ſhe be dead, what uſe are they of, and if ſhe be not, all may be well, and you may ſtill ſee her again. O! never, never, ſays my father; but could I be ſure ſhe was alive, I would take a Swangean, and never cloſe my Graundee, till I found her, or dropt dead in the ſearch. And ſuppoſe you could meet with her, Sir,

* *A place where the dead are buried.*
† *A fruit like an apple.*

ſays I, the very ſight would overcome you, and be dangerous. No, believe me, boy, ſays he, I ſhould then be fully eaſy and compoſed; and were ſhe to come in this moment, I ſhould ſuffer no ſurpriſe, but pleaſure. No ſurpriſe, Sir, ſays I? Not if ſhe were alive and well, ſays he. Then Sir, ſays Hallycarnie, will you excuſe me if I introduce her; and went out directly, without ſtaying for an anſwer.

WHEN ſhe was gone, Quangrollart, ſays my father ſternly, what is the meaning of your's and your ſiſter's playing thus upon my weakneſs? It is what I can upon no account forgive. It looks as if you were weary of me, and wanted to break my heart. To what purpoſe is all this prelude of yours, to introduce to me ſomebody, who, by her likeneſs to my daughter, may expoſe me to your ſcoff and raillery? This is a diſobedience I never expected from either of you.

THE great image attend me! ſays I, Sir, you have much miſtaken me; but I will not leave you in doubt, even till Hallycarnie's return; you ſhall ſee Youwarkee with her; for all our diſcourſe, I'll aſſure you, has but been concerted to prepare you for her reception, with three of her children. And am I then (ſays he in a tranſport) ſtill to be bleſſed? You are, Sir, ſays I; aſſure yourſelf you are.

BY this time we heard them coming; but my poor father had not power to go to meet them: And, upon Youwarkee's nearer approach, to fall at his knees, his limbs failing him, he ſunk, and, without ſpeaking a word, fell backwards on a * Cught Drappec, which ſtood behind him; and, being quite motionleſs, we concluded him to be ſtone dead. On this, the wom[illegible]

* *A bed or couch, covered with a ſort of cotton*

came entirely helpleſs, ſcreaming only, and wringing their hands in extravagant poſtures. But I, having a little more preſence of mind, called for the * Calentar, who, by holding his noſe, pinching his feet, and other applications, in a little time brought him to his ſenſes again.

You may more eaſily conceive than I deſcribe, both the confuſion we were all in, during my father's diſorder, and the gratulations upon his recovery: So, as I can give you but a defective account of theſe, I ſhall paſs them by, and come to our more ſerious diſcourſe, after my father and your wife had, without ſpeaking a word, wept themſelves quite dry on each other's necks.

My father then looking upon the three children, (who were alſo crying to ſee their mammy cry) and who are theſe, ſays he? Theſe, Sir, ſays Youwarkee, are three (of eight) of your grand-children. And where is your Barkatt, ſays he? At home with the reſt Sir, replied ſhe, who are ſome of them too ſmall to come ſo far yet: But Sir, ſays ſhe, pray excuſe my anſwering you any more queſtions, till you are a little recovered from the commotion I perceive my preſence has brought upon your ſpirits; and as reſt, the Calentar ſays, will be exceedingly proper, I will retire with my ſiſter till you are better able to bear company. My father was with much difficulty prevailed with to part with her out of his ſight; but the Calentar preſſing it, were all diſmiſſed, and he lay down to reſt.

My brother would have gone on, but I told him, as it grew near time for repoſe, and he and Roſig muſt needs be fatigued with ſo long a flight, if they pleaſed, (as I had already heard the moſt valuable part of all he

* *A ſort of doctor in all great families.*

could ſay, in that my father received my wife and children ſo kindly, and that he left them all well) we would defer his farther relation till the next day: Which they both agreeing to, I laid them in my own bed, myſelf ſleeping in a ſpare hammock.

CHAP. XXVIII.

A diſcourſe on light; Quangrollart explains the word Craſhee; believes a fowl is a fruit; gives a further account of Youwarkee's reception by her father, and by the king; Tommy and Hallycarnie provided for at Court; Youwarkee and her father viſit the Colamb's, and are viſited; her return put off till next winter, when her father is to come with her.

THE next day I prepared again of the beſt of every thing for my new gueſts. I killed three fowls, and ordered Pedro, (who was as good a cook almoſt as myſelf) to get them ready for boiling, whilſt we took a walk to the lake. Though we went out in the cleareſt part of the morning, I heard no complaint of the light. I took the liberty to aſk my brother, if the light did not offend him; for I told him my wife could not bear ſo much without ſpectacles. What is that ſpectacle, ſays he? Something I made your ſiſter, ſays I, to prevent the inconvenience of too much light upon her eyes. He ſaid the light was ſcarce at all troubleſome to him, for he had been in much greater, and was uſed to it; and that the Glumms, who travelled much abroad, could bear more light than the Gawrys, who ſtaid much at home; theſe ſtirring but little out, unleſs in large companies, and that of one another, and very rarely admitting Glumms amongſt them before marriage. For

his own part, he ſaid, he had an office at * Craſh Doorpt, which, though he executed chiefly by a deputy, obliged him to reſide there ſometimes for a long ſeaſon together; and that being a more luminous country than Arndrumnſtake, light was become familiar to him; for it was very obſervable, that ſome who had been uſed to it young, though they might in time overcome it, yet at firſt it was very uneaſy.

I was upon the tenter whilſt he ſpoke, leſt, before he had done, a queſtion, I had a thouſand times thought to have aſked my wife, ſhould ſlip out of my head, as it had ſo often done before; and was, what I had for years deſired to be reſolved in, viz. What the meaning of the word Slitt was, when applied to a man? So, on his pauſing, I ſaid, that his mention of Craſh-Doorpt reminded me of enquiring what Craſhee meant, when applied to a Glumm or Gawry. It would be no hard taſk, he ſaid, to ſatisfy me in reſpect of that, as I already underſtood the nature of the Graundee; whereupon he went on thus: 'Slitting is the only puniſhment 'we uſe to incorrigible criminals: Our method is, 'where any one has committed a very heinous offence, 'or, which is the ſame thing, has multiplied the acts of 'offence, he has a long ſtring tied round his neck, in 'the manner of a cravat; and then two Glummſtone 'at each end, take it in their hands, ſtanding ſide by 'ſide with him; two more ſtand before him, and two 'behind him; all which in that manner take flight, ſo 'that the ſtring keeps the criminal in the middle of 'them; thus they conduct him to Craſh Doorpt, which 'lies farther on the other ſide of Arndrumnſtake, than 'this Arkoe does on this ſide of it, and is juſt ſuch an 'Arkoe as ours, but much bigger within the rocks. 'When they come to the Covett, they alight, where

* *The country of the Slitts.*

'my deputy immediately orders the malefactor to be 'ſlitt, ſo that he can never more return to Normnbd- 'ſgrſutt, or indeed by any means get out of that Ar- 'koe, but muſt end his days there. The method of 'ſlitting is thus; the criminal is laid on his back with 'his Graundee open, and after a recapitulation of his 'crimes and his condemnation, the officer, with a 'ſharp ſtone, ſlits the * Gume between each of the '†Filas of the Graundee, ſo that he can never fly more.' But what is ſtill worſe to new comers, if they are not very young, the light of the place, which is ſo ſtrong, that it is ſome years before they can overcome it, if ever they do.

THIS diſcourſe gave me a great pleaſure; thereupon I repeated the dialogue that had paſſed between me and Youwarkee about my being ſlitt, and how we had held an argument a long time, without being able to come at one another's meaning. But pray, brother, ſays I, how comes that light country to agree ſo well with you? Why, ſays he, the ‡ Colambat of Craſh-Doorpt is reckoned one of the moſt honourable employments in the ſtate, by reaſon of the hazard of it, and the perſon accepting it muſt be young; it was, by my father's intereſt at court, given to me at nine year's of age; my friend Roſig has followed my fortune in it ever ſince, being much about my age, and has a poſt under me there: In ſhort, by being obliged to be ſo much there, and from ſo tender an age too, I have pretty well enured myſelf to any light.

BY this time we had got home again to dinner, which Pedro had ſet out as elegantly as my country could afford, conſiſting of pickles and preſerves, as uſual, a diſh of hard eggs, and boiled fowls with ſpinage.

* *The Membrane.* † *Ribs.* ‡ *Government.*

My gueſts, as I expected, ſtared at the fowls, but never offered to touch them, or ſeemed in the leaſt inclinable to do ſo. I was afraid they would be cold, and begged them to let me help them. I put a wing on each of their plates, and a leg on my own; but perceiving they waited to ſee how I managed it, I ſtuck in my fork, cut off a ſlice, dipped it in the ſalt, and put it in my mouth. Juſt as I did, they did, and appeared very well pleaſed with the taſte. I never in my life, ſays Roſig, ſaw a * Crullmott of this ſhape before; and laid hold of a leg, (taking it for a ſtick I had thruſt in, as he told me afterwards) intending to pull it out; but finding it grew there, Mr Peter, ſays he, you have the oddeſt ſhaped Crullmotts that ever I ſaw; pray, what part of the woods do they grow in? Grow in, ſays I? Ay, ſays he, I mean whether your Crullmott trees are like ours or not? Why, ſays I, theſe fowls are about my yard and the wood too. What, ſays he, is it a running plant like a † Bott. No, no, ſays I, a bird that I keep tame about my houſe; and theſe, (ſhewing him the eggs) are the eggs of theſe birds, and the birds grow from them. Prithee, ſays Quangrollart, never let us enquire what they are till we have dined; for my brother Peter will give us nothing we need be afraid of.

It growing into the night, by that time we roſe from table, I ſet a bowl of punch before them, made with my treacle and ſour ram's-horn juice, which they pulled off plentifully. After ſome bumpers had gone round, I deſired my brother to proceed where he left off, in the account of my wife's reception with her father.

When my father, ſays he, had recovered himſelf by ſome hours repoſe, the firſt thing he did was to order my ſiſter Youwarkee to be called; who coming

* *A fruit like a melon.* † *A gourd.*

into his preſence, he took her from her knees, kiſſed her, and ordered all to depart but myſelf and Hollycarnie. Then bidding us ſit down, ſays he to your wife, Daughter, your appearance, whom I have ſo long lamented as dead, has given me the trueſt cordial I could have received, and I hope will add both to my health and years. I have heard, you ſuſpect my anger for ſome part of your paſt conduct (for ſhe had hinted ſo to her ſiſter and me) which you juſtly enough imagine may be cenſured; but, my dear life, I am this day (what I did not expect any more to be) a father of a new-born child; and not of one only, but of many; and this day, I ſay, daughter, ſhall not be ſpent in ſorrow and excuſes, or any thing to interrupt our mutual felicity; neither will I ever hereafter permit you to beg my forgiveneſs, or attempt to palliate any of your proceedings; for know, child, that a benevolence freely beſtowed, is better than twice its value obtained by petition: I therefore, as in preſence of the great image, your brother and ſiſter, at this inſtant, eraſe from my mind forever, what thoughts I may have had prejudicial to the love I ever bore you, as I will have you to do all ſuch as may cloud the unreſerved complacency you uſed to appear with before me: And now Quangrollart, ſays he, let the guard be drawn out before my Covett, and let the whole country be entertained for ſeven days; proclaim liberty to all perſons confined; and let not the leaſt ſorrow appear in any face throughout my Colambat.

I RETIRED immediately, and gave the neceſſary orders for the ſpeedy diſpatch of my father's commands; which indeed were performed to the utmoſt; and nothing for ſeven days was to be heard through the whole diſtrict of Arndrumnſtake, but joy, and the name of Youwarkee.

My father, ſo ſoon as he had diſpatched the above orders, ſent for the children before him, whom he kiſſed and bleſſed, frequently lifting up his eyes in gratitude to the great image, for the unexpected happineſs he enjoyed on that occaſion; and then he ordered Youwarkee to let him know what had befallen her in her abſence, and where ſhe lived, and with whom.

Youwarkee was ſetting out with ſome indirect excuſes; but my father abſolutely forbid her, and charged her only to mention plain facts, without flouriſhes. So ſhe began with her Swangean, and the accidental fall ſhe had; your taking her in after it; and ſaving her life. She told him, your continued kindneſs ſo wrought upon her, that ſhe found herſelf uncapable of diſeſteeming you, but never ſhewed her affection, till, having examined every particular of your life, and finding you a worthy man, ſhe could not avoid becoming your wife; and ſhe ſaid, the reaſon why ſhe always declined being ſeen by her friends, in their Swangeans, was, for fear ſhe ſhould be forced from you, though ſhe longed to ſee us; and that at laſt, ſhe was come by your conſent; and, that had it reſted there only, ſhe might have come much ſooner; for that you would often have had her ſhew herſelf to her friends, when you heard them, having ſtrong deſires yourſelf to be known to them.

My father, upon hearing this, was ſo charmed with your tenderneſs and affection to his daughter, that you already rival his own iſſue in his eſteem, and he is perſuaded he can never do enough for you or your children.

The noiſe of Youwarkee's return, and my father's rejoicing, ſoon ſpread over all Normnbdſgrſutt; and King Georigetti ſent expreſs to my father, to command

him to attend with your wife and children at Brandleguarp, his capital. Thither accordingly we all went, with a grand retinue, and ſtaid twenty days. The king took great delight, as well as the ladies of the court, to hear Youwarkee and her children talk Engliſh, and in being informed of you and your way of life; and, ſo fond was Yurcumbourſe (who, though not the king's wife, is inſtead of one) of my nephew Tommy, that, upon my father's return, ſhe took him to herſelf, and aſſured my ſiſter, he ſhould continue near her perſon till he was qualified for better preferment. The king's ſiſter, Jahamel, would alſo have taken Patty into her ſervice; but ſhe begged to be permitted to attend her mother to Arndrumnſtake; ſo Hallycarnie her ſiſter, who choſe to continue with Jahamel, was received in her room.

UPON my father's return to Arndrumaſtake, he found no leſs than fifteen expreſſes from ſeveral Colamb's, deſiring to rejoice with him on the return of his daughter, with particular invitations to him and her to ſpend ſome time with them. My father, though he hates more pomp than is neceſſary to ſupport dignity, could do no leſs than ſeverally viſit them, with Youwarkee, attended by a grand retinue, ſpending more or leſs days with each; hoping when that was over, he ſhould have ſome little time to ſpend in retirement with his daughter before her departure, who now began to be uneaſy for you, who, ſhe ſaid, would ſuffer the greateſt concern in her abſence; but, upon their return from thoſe viſits, at about the end of four months progreſs, they found themſelves in as little likelihood of retirement as the firſt day: For the inferior Colamb's were continually poſting away, one after another, to perform their reſpects to my father, and all the inferior magiſtrates of ſmaller diſtricts ſending to know when they might be

permitted to do the ſame. Poor Youwarkee, who ſaw no end of it, expreſſed her concern for you in ſo lively a manner to my father, that, finding he could by no means put a ſtop to the good-will of the people, and not bearing the thoughts of Youwarkee's depature, till ſhe had now received all their compliments, he reſolved to keep her with him till the next winter ſet in theſe parts, and then to accompany her himſelf to Graundevolet. In the mean while, that you might not remain in an uneaſy ſuſpence what was become of my ſiſter, he ordered me to diſpatch meſſengers expreſs to inform you of the reaſons of her ſtay: But I told him, if he pleaſed, I would execute that office myſelf, with my friend Roſig; with which he was very well pleaſed, and enjoined me to aſſure you of his affection, and that he himſelf was debtor to you for the love and kindneſs you had ſhewn his daughter.

THUS brother, ſays Quangrollart, I hope I have acquitted myſelf of my charge to your ſatisfaction; and it only now remains that I return you my acknowledgments for your hearty welcome to myſelf and friend: Which (with concern I ſpeak it) I am afraid I ſhall not have an opportunity to return at Arndrumſtake, the diſtance being ſo immenſely great, and you not having the Graundee. To-morrow morning my friend and I will ſet out on our return home.

QUANGROLLART having done, I told him I could not but bluſh at the load of undeſerved praiſes he had laid on me; but, as he had received his notion of my merits from a wife, too fond to let my character ſink for want of her ſupport, it would be ſufficient, if himſelf could conceive of, and alſo repreſent me at his return, in no worſe a light than other men; and though it gave me pain to think of loſing my wife ſo long, yet his account

of her health, and the company he aſſured me ſhe would return in, would doubly compenſate my loſs; and I begged of him, if it might be, with any convenience, he would let ſome meſſenger come the day before her, to give me notice of their approach. As to their departure on the morrow; I told them I could by no means think of that; as I had propoſed to catch them a dinner of freſh fiſh in the lake, and to ſhew them my boat, and how and where I came into this Arkoe; believing, by what I had obſerved, it would be no ſmall novelty to them. So having engaged them one day more, we parted for that night to reſt.

CHAP. XXIX.

The author ſhews Quangrollart and Roſig his poultry; they are ſurpriſed at them; he takes them a fiſhing; they wonder at his cart, and at his ſhooting a fowl; they are terribly frightened at the firing of the gun; Wilkins pacifies them.

I WAS heartily ſorry to loſe my brother thus quickly, and ſtill more ſo, to find it would be a long time yet ere I ſhould ſee my wife; however, I was reſolved to behave as chearfully as poſſible, and to omit nothing I could do, the few remaining hours of Quangrollart's ſtay with me, to rivet myſelf theroughly in his eſteem, and to diſmiſs him with a moſt cordial affection to me, and the reſt of my children here with him. I roſe early in the morning to provide a good breakfaſt for my gueſts, and conſidering we ſhould be in the air moſt part of the day, I treated them with a diſh of hot fiſh ſoup, and ſet before them on the table a jovial bottle of

brandy, and my ſilver can: This laſt piece I choſe to ſhew them, as a ſpecimen of the richneſs of my houſhold furniture, and the grandeur of my living, concealing moſt of my other curioſities, till Pandlehamby my father-in-law's arrival; for I thought it would be imprudent not to have ſomewhat new of this kind to diſplay at his entertainment.

AFTER a plenteous meal, we ſet out on our pleaſurable expedition; having told Pedro what to get for dinner, and that I believed we ſhould not return till late.

WE firſt took a turn in the wood; but I did not lead them near my tent, becauſe I did not chuſe my wife ſhould hear of that till ſhe came. I then ſhewed them my farm-yard and poultry; which they were ſtrangely ſurpriſed at, and wondered to ſee ſo many creatures come at my call, and run about my legs, only upon a whiſtle, though before there were only two or three to be ſeen. They aſked me an hundred queſtions about the fowl, which I anſwered, and told them, theſe were ſome ſuch as they had eaten, and called Crull-motts, the day before. I afterwards carried them to hear the muſic of thoſe plants that I call my cream-cheeſe; which, as there happened to be a ſmall breeze ſtirring, made their uſual melody.

WHEN we had diverted ourſelves ſometime in the wood, we went to the wet dock, where I ſhewed them my boat. At firſt view they wondered what uſe it was for; to ſatisfy them in that, I ſtepped in, deſiring them to follow me; but ſeeing the boat's agitation, they did not chuſe to venture, till I aſſured them they might come with the greateſt ſafety: At length, with ſome

perſuaſion, and repeated aſſurances, I prevailed on them to truſt themſelves with me.

WE firſt rowed to the bridge, where I informed them by what accident I was drawn down the ſtream, on the other ſide of the rock, and after a tedious and dangerous paſſage, diſcharged ſafe in the lake through that opening

I THEN told them how ſurpriſed I had been, juſt before I knew Youwarkee, with the ſight of her country-folks; firſt on the lake, and then taking flight from the bridge; and what had been my thoughts, and how great my terrors on that occaſion.

AFTER we had viewed the bridge, I took them to my rill, (for by this time they were reconciled to the boat, and would help me to row it) and ſhewed them how I got water. I then landed them to ſee the method of fiſhing; for which purpoſe I laid my net in proper order, and fixing it as uſual, I brought it round out at the rill, and had a very good hawl, with which I deſired them to help me up; for though I could eaſily have done it myſelf, I had a mind to let them have a hand in the ſport, with which they were pleaſed. I perceived however, the fiſh were not agreeable to them; for when any one came near their hands, they avoided touching it. Notwithſtanding, having got the net on ſhore, I laid it open: But to ſee how they ſtared at the fiſh (creeping backwards) and then at me and the net, it made me very merry to myſelf, though I did not care to ſhew it.

I DREW up at that draught twenty-two fiſhes in all, of which a few were near an ell long, ſeveral about two feet, and ſome ſmaller. When they ſaw me take up the large ones in my arms, and tumble them into the

boat, they both, unrequeſted, took up of the ſmall ones, and put them in likewiſe; but dropping them every time they ſtruck their tails, the fiſh had commonly two or three falls ere they came to the boat.

I ASKED them how they liked that ſport, and they told me it was ſomething very ſurpriſing, that I ſhould know juſt where the fiſh were, as they could ſee none before I pulled them up, and yet they did not hear me whiſtle. I perceived by this, they imagined I could whiſtle the fiſh together as well as the fowls, and I did not undeceive them; being well enough pleaſed they ſhould think me excellent for ſomething, as I really thought they were on account of the Graundee.

UPON our return, when I had docked my boat, as there were too many fiſh to carry up by hand to the Grotto, I deſired them to take a turn upon the ſhore till I fetched my cart for it. I made what haſte I could, and brought one of my guns with me, which I determined upon ſome occaſion or other to fire off; for I took it, they would be more ſurpriſed at the exploſion of that, than at any thing they had yet ſeen. Having loaded my fiſh, and marched backwards, they eyed my cart very much, and wondered what made the wheels move about ſo; taking them for legs it walked upon, till I explained the reaſon of it, and then they deſired to draw it, which they did with great eagerneſs, one at a time, the other obſerving its motions.

AS we advanced homewards, there came a large water-fowl, about the ſize of a gooſe, flying croſs us. I bid them look at it, which they did. Says my brother, I wiſh I had it. If you have a mind for it, ſays I, I will give it you. I wiſh you would, ſays he, for I never ſaw any thing like it in my life. Stand ſtill

then, says I, and stepping two or three yards before them, I fired, and down it dropt. I then turned about, to observe what impression the gun had made on them, and could not help laughing to see them so terrified. Rosig, before I could well look about, had got fifty paces from me, and my brother was lying behind the cart of fish. I called and asked them what was the matter, and desired them to come to me, telling them they should receive no harm, and offered my brother the gun to handle; but he, thanking me as much as if he had, retired to Rosig.

FINDING they made a serious affair of it, for I saw them whispering together, I was under some apprehension for the consequences of my frolick. Thinks I, if under this disgust they take flight, refusing to hear me, and report that I was about to murder them, or tell any other pernicious story to my father of me, I am absolutely undone, and shall never see Youwarkee more. So I laid down the gun by the fish, and moving slowly towards them, expostulated with them upon their disorder; assuring them, that though the object before them might surprise them, it was but a common instrument in my country, which every boy used to take birds with; and protested to them, that the gun of itself could do nothing without my skill directing it; and that they might be sure I should never employ that, but to their service. This, and a great deal more, brought us together again; and when we came to reasoning cooly, they blamed me for not giving them notice. Says I, there was no room for me to explain the operation of the gun to you, whilst the bird was on the wing; for it would have been gone out of my reach before I could have made you sensible of that, and so have escaped me; which, as you desired me to get it you, I was resolved it should not do. But for your-

ſelves, ſurely you could have no diſſidence in me: That is highly unbecoming of man to man, eſpecially relations; and, above all, a relation to whom you have brought the welcomeſt news upon earth, in the love of my dear father, and his reconciliation to my wife.

At laſt, by degrees, I brought them to confeſs, that it was only a groundleſs ſudden terror, which ſuppreſſed their reaſon for a while; but, that what I ſaid was all very true; and as their ſerious reflection returned, they were ſatisfied of it. I then ſtepped for the bird, and brought it to them: It was a very fine feathered creature, and they were very much delighted with the beauty of it, and deſired it might be laid upon the cart, and carried home.

All the way we went afterwards to the Grotto, nothing was to be heard from them but my praiſes, and what a great and wiſe man brother Peter was; and no wonder now, ſiſter Youwarkee, (ſays Quangrollart) once knowing him, could never leave him. It was not my buſineſs to gainſay this, but only to receive it with ſo much modeſty as might ſerve to heighten their good opinion of me; and I found, upon my wife's return, that Quangrollart had painted me in no mean colours to his father.

I once more had the pleaſure of entertaining them, with the old fare, and ſome of the freſh fiſh, part boiled, and part fryed; which laſt they choſe before the boiled. We made a very chearful ſupper, talking over that days adventures, and of their enſuing journey home; after which, we retired to reſt, mutually pleaſed. We all aroſe early the next morning. We took a ſhort breakfaſt; after which Quangrollart and Roſig ſtuck their chaplets with the longeſt and moſt beautiful

feathers of the bird I ſhot, thinking them a fine ornament. Being now ready for departure, they embraced me and the children, and were juſt taking flight, when it came into my head, that as the king's miſtreſs had taken Tommy into her protection, it might poſſibly be a means of ingratiating him into her favor, if I ſent him the flageilet, (for I had in my wife's abſence, made two others near as good, by copying exactly after it.) I therefore deſired to know, if one of them would trouble himſelf with a ſmall piece of wood, I very much wanted to convey to my ſon. Roſig anſwered, with all his heart; if it was not very long he would put it into his Colapet *. So I ſtepped in, and fetching the flageilet, preſented it to Roſig. My brother ſeeing it look oddly, with holes in it, deſired (after he had aſked if it was not a little gun) to have the handling of it. It was given him, and he ſurveyed it very attentively. Being inquiſitive into the uſe of it, I told him it was a muſical inſtrument, and played ſeveral tunes upon it; with which he and his companion were in raptures. I doubt not, they would have ſat a week to hear me, if I would have gone on; but I deſiring the latter to take care of its ſafety, he put it in his Colapet, and away they went.

* *A bag they always carry round the neck.*

THE END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.